



THE GIFT OF
Miss Winnifred Wilson

Heath's Modern Language Series.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

BY

C. H. GRANDGENT,

PROFESSOR OF ROMANCE LANGUAGES IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

Revised and Enlarged

BOSTON, U.S.A.:

D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS.

1908

Copyright, 1887 and 1904,
BY C. H. GRANDGENT.

PREFACE.

THIS volume is the result of an attempt to put into convenient form and the smallest possible compass all the grammar that the ordinary student of Italian will need. Short as the book is, it contains some paragraphs which beginners will probably skip: the longer lists of words and endings, and a great part of the chapters on suffixes and irregular verbs will be useful mainly for reference. The vocabularies cover the twenty-one exercises; they are not intended to include words explained in the notes, nor proper names that are exactly the same in Italian and in English.

I have endeavored to make the book represent the Italian language as it is spoken and written at the present day; the exercises are taken chiefly from reading-books lately prepared for Tuscan schools. Still, I have tried to give also as many obsolete forms as students of the Italian classics will require.

It has been my aim throughout to make the rules clear for all classes of pupils, even for those ignorant of other foreign languages, provided they understand the technical words commonly used in grammars. With this object in view, I have ascribed to the Italian vowels the pronunciation of the English ones that are most like them: an accurate description of the Italian sounds would, I fear, prove confusing to beginners who have had no training in phonetics. It will be easy for the instructor to explain not only

the vowels, but some of the consonants, and the division of words into syllables, much better than can be done in a book like this.

The authorities I have consulted most are the dictionaries of Fanfani, Rigutini and Fanfani, Fornari (*Nuovo Bazzarini*), and Tommaseo and Bellini. I have made but little use of other grammars; I am, however, indebted to Toscani for some ideas and a few of my examples. The chapters on syntax, and the treatment of irregular verbs, pronouns, suffixes, and the plural of words in *-co* and *-go* are almost entirely the result of original work.

In conclusion, I wish to express my gratitude to Professor Nash, of Harvard, to my friend and teacher, Sig. Filippo Orlando, of Florence, and to the gentlemen who assisted me in correcting the proof-sheets; and I wish above all to thank Professor Sheldon, of Harvard, and Professor Bendelari, of Yale, without whose aid and encouragement I should scarcely have ventured to offer this book to the public.

CAMBRIDGE, September, 1887.

NOTE TO THE REVISED EDITION.

To facilitate the use of this book with classes I have included in it a full set of Lessons and Exercises, the latter being taken in large part from my *Italian Composition*. The Italian texts at the end of the chapters, in the body of the *Grammar*, can be used to advantage at the outset of the course for practice in pronunciation and reading at sight. The English exercises in the body of the book should be reserved for reviews.

CAMBRIDGE, May, 1904.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
LESSONS AND EXERCISES	ix-xxxiv
PRONUNCIATION	1-7
ARTICLES	7-11
The Definite Article	7-10
The Indefinite Article	10
<i>Exercises 1, 2</i>	11
NOUNS	11-17
Gender	12-13
Number	13-16
<i>Exercises 3, 4</i>	16-17
ADJECTIVES	18-23
Gender and Number	18-20
Comparison.....	20-22
<i>Exercises 5, 6</i>	22-23
AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES ; NUMERALS	23-29
Augmentative and Diminutive Endings	23-25
Numerals.....	25-28
<i>Exercises 7, 8</i>	28-29
DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRO-	
NOUNS	30-35
Demonstrative Pronouns.....	30-31
Interrogative Pronouns	31
Relative Pronouns	31-33
Possessive Pronouns	33-34
<i>Exercises 9, 10</i>	35
PERSONAL PRONOUNS	36-46
Conjunctive Forms.....	36-40

	PAGE
Disjunctive Forms	40-42
Forms of Address	43-44
<i>Exercises 11, 12.</i>	44-46
AUXILIARY VERBS	47-55
Auxiliaries of Voice and Tense	47-53
Essere	47
Avere	48
Modal Auxiliaries	53-54
<i>Exercises 13, 14.</i>	54-55
REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS	55-65
The Regular Verb	56-59
First Conjugation	56-57
Second and Third Conjugations.....	57-58
Fourth Conjugation	58-59
The Irregular Verb	60-63
Porre	60-61
<i>Exercises 15, 16.</i>	63-65
MOODS AND TENSES	65-74
Infinitive and Participle	65-68
Past, Present, and Future	68-69
Conditional	69
Subjunctive	69-72
<i>Exercises 17, 18.</i>	72-74
CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND ADVERBS	74-84
Conjunctions	74-76
Prepositions	76-80
Adverbs.....	80-82
<i>Exercises 19, 20</i>	83-84
INDEFINITE PRONOUNS	84-87
<i>Exercise 21.</i>	87
LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS ARRANGED ACCORDING TO CONJUGATION	88-100
First Conjugation	89-90
Second Conjugation.....	90-93

	PAGE
Third Conjugation	93-98
Present Regular	93-96
Present Irregular	96-98
Fourth Conjugation	99-100
Present Regular	99
Present Irregular	99-100
ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.....	101-105
ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.....	107-114
ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY.....	115-121
APPENDIX.....	123-127
Additional Notes on Pronunciation.....	123-125
Inflections of the Voice.....	126-127
INDEX.....	129-132

LESSONS AND EXERCISES.

NOTE. — The following forty-one lessons furnish, in the form of references to the body of the *Grammar*, a course of study in the rudiments of Italian. The numbers refer to *paragraphs*: they include all *subdivisions in the same type*, all *examples*, and all *paradigms*, belonging to them; but they do not comprise subdivisions in finer print unless these are expressly mentioned. The exercise following each lesson is to be used in connection with it; the exercises in the body of the book are reserved for review work.

LESSON 1.

Pronunciation: **1**; **2**; **2**, *a*; **3**; **4**, including the fine print except **s**, *d*; **5**; **6**; **7**; **8**. Pronounce all the examples several times.

EXERCISE I.

Pronounce this text: —

Quándo è fréddo è invêrno. Néll' invêrno cáde la nêve, e
When it-is cold it-is winter. In-the winter falls the snow, and
gli álberi sóno sénza fôglie e i giardini non háno fióri. Dôpo,
the trees are without leaves and the gardens have-no flowers. Later,
l' ária comíncia a riscaldáre, nêlle campágne si védono l' êrbe
the air begins to grow-warm, in-the fields are-seen grass
e i fióri, négli ôrti náscono i baccèlli, i pisèlli, pôi le ciliêge;
and flowers, in-the gardens come-forth string-beans, peas, then cherries;
gli uccèlli cántano, non si patisce piú fréddo, si sta veraménte
the birds sing, we-do-not-suffer any-more cold, we-are really
bêne, e allóra è primavêra. Finisce la primavêra, comíncia
comfortable, and then it-is spring. Ends the spring, begins
il cáldo; il sóle brúcia; nêlla campágnna si védono le spíge del
the heat; the sun burns; in-the country we-see the ears of
gráno, ci sóno tante bête frúttta, méle, pére, susíne, albicôcche,
corn, there are many fine fruits, apples, pears, plums, apricots,
pêsche. Quésto têmpo si chiáma estate. Il cáldo va vía, e
peaches. This time is-called summer. The heat goes away, and
ritórna l' ária cóme nêlla primavêra; le víti sóno cáríche
becomes-again the air as in-the spring; the vines are laden
d' úva, i fichi comínciano a dárci i lóro dólci frútti; ma a
with grapes, the fig-trees begin to give-us their sweet fruit; but
pôco a pôco si rifá un pô' fréddo, gli álberi pêrdono le fôglie,
little by little it-grows-again a little cold, the trees lose their leaves,
il vênto sóffia assái; e quésto têmpo si chiáma autúnnno.
the wind blows hard; and this time is-called autumn.

LESSON 2.

Review Lesson 1.

EXERCISE 2.

Pronounce this text: —

1. Vi parlerò di Vittòrio Alfieri, e ne ammirerete la forte
I-shall-speak-to-you of Victor Alfieri, and you-will-admire-his strong
 e costante volontà. Egli era nato nel mille settecento quaranta-
and firm will. He was born in 1749

nove di nobile famiglia piemontese¹: era conte. Allora si
of a-noble family of-Piedmont: he-was a-count. Then people
 credeva che bastasse essere nobili per valere qualcòsa; perciò
believed that it-sufficed to-be noble in-order-to be-worth something; therefore
 i più dei nobili non studiavano,² o studiavano² alla peggio, perchè
most-of-the nobles did-not-study, or studied carelessly, because
 tanto la nobiltà dava loro diritto alle cariche e agli onori, anche
their-mere-rank gave them a-right to offices and to honors, even
 se erano ignoranti. L' Alfieri, da giovinetto, fu messo a studiare
if they-were ignorant. Alfieri, as a-lad, was put to study
 all' Accademia di Torino; ma egli dopo qualche anno ne uscì
at-the Academy of Turin; but he after a-few-years came-out
 senza saper³ nulla di nulla, non ostante che avesse un bel-
without knowing anything-at-all, notwithstanding that he-had a fine.
 l' ingegno, perchè nè anche l' ingegno può valere senza lo studio.
mind, because not even talent can avail without study.

Uscito pertanto dall' Accademia viaggiò per l' Italia, la
Having-come-out, then, from-the Academy, he-travelled through Italy,
 Francia e l' Inghilterra.
France, and England.

2. Giunto all' età di ventisette anni, aprì, come si dice,
Having-arrived-at-the age of 27 years, he-opened, as people-say,
 gli occhi, e s' accorse della sua ignoranza. Vittòrio si vergognò⁴
his-eyes, and became-aware of his ignorance. Victor was-thoroughly
 altamente di sè stesso; sperò che studiando avrèbbe potuto⁵
ashamed of himself; he-hoped that by-studying he-might
 giovare all' onore d' Italia; e allora féce il generoso¹ propòsito
add to-the glory of Italy; and then he-made the lofty resolve
 di mutar³ vita: determinò di abbandonare gli usi e i costumi
to change his-life: he-determined to give-up the habits and the customs
 della nobile gioventù dei suoi tempi, di lasciar³ tutto per
of-the noble youth of his times, to leave everything in-order-to
 istudiare.² A far³ dei buoni propòsiti ci vuol⁶ poco; il forte
study. To make good resolutions takes but-little; the difficulty
 sta nel mantenerli. E non è mica un affar di nulla, quando una
lies in keeping-them. And it-is-not at-all an easy-matter, when a

persóna per lúngo córso di ánni ha contrátto cêrte abitudini
person through a-long course of years has formed certain habits
 e cêrti costúmi, e si è avvezzáta a vívere in tal módo,
and certain customs, and has-accustomed-himself to living in such a-way,
 non è míca, díco, un affár di núlla un bêl giòrno mutár víta,
it-is-not at-all, I-say, an easy-matter one fine day to-change one's-life,
 e diventár uòmo tútto affátto divêrso da quéllo di práma.
and become a-man entirely different from one's-former-self.

3. Grándi sfórzi dovè fáre Vittòrio Alfìeri per mutár víta :
Great efforts Victor-Alfieri-had-to-make to change his-life :
 vi básti sapére che siccómè non si sentíva tánta fòrza d' ánimo
suffice-it-to-say that as he-did-not-feel so-much strength of mind
 da proseguíre⁷ a studiáre, allorchè per le sùe abitudini avrèbbe
as-to continue to study, when from-force-of-habit he-would-
 sentíto il desidèrio⁸ d' uscír³ di cása e di andáre a divertírsi,
have-felt the desire of going-out and going to amuse-himself,
 l' Alfìeri si facéva dal servitóre legáre álla poltróna. È véro
Alfieri had-himself tied-by-his-servant to-his arm-chair. It-is true
 che a pôco a pôco la volontà prése⁹ il di sópra: a pôco a
that little by little his will got the upper-hand: little by
 pôco, s' intènde, l' Alfìeri non êbbe piú bisógno di ricórrere a
little, you-understand, Alfieri had-no-more need of resorting to
 quèsti mèzzi¹⁰; e ciò appúnto pròva quánto è véro che núlla
this means; and this just proves how-true-it-is that nothing
 è difficile a chi vuòle. Così⁸ l' Alfìeri che si míse a studiáre
is hard to him-who wills. Thus Alfieri, who began to study
 a véntisètte ánni, púre potè arriváre ad êssere il piú brávo
at 27 years, was-yet-able to-come to be the best
 scrittóre di tragèdie dell' Itália; ed' è úna delle glòrie del
writer of tragedies in Italy; and he-is one of-the glories of
 nòstro paése.¹ Ma se quándo avéva fáto il proponíménto di
our country. But if, when he-had made the resolve to
 mutár víta e di studiáre, l' Alfìeri, conoscèndo quánti sfórzi
change his-life and to study, Alfieri, knowing what efforts
 gli ci sarèbbero volúti⁵ per mantenére la proméssa, invéce di
it-would-require to keep his promise, instead of
 fársi legáre álla poltróna avésse détto: *non mi riêscè*, nè
having-himself-tied to-his arm-chair, had said "I-can't," neither
 égli sarèbbe diventáto quell' uòmo sómmo che fu, nè
would-he-have-become that great-man that he-was, nor
 l' Itália potrèbbe óra vantáre un cosí⁸ gran poéta.
could-Italy now boast-of such-a great poet.

¹ See 4, S, c. ² The verb is *studiáre*: in Italian a word beginning with s plus another consonant, if it is immediately preceded by a word ending in a

consonant, prefixes *i* to the *s*; Italians are averse to a group of three consonants of which the middle one is *s*.³ An infinitive often drops its final *e* in the interior of a phrase.

⁴ The reflexive verb *vergognarsi* ('to shame one's self') means 'to be ashamed.'

⁵ The compound conditional, in idiomatic Italian, is very often used in place of the simple conditional: *avrèbbe potuto giovare* ('he might have helped') really means 'he might help'; so *ci sarèbbero voluti* ('there would have been required') means 'there would be needed.'

⁶ *Ci vuòle*, shortened here to *ci vuòl*, means literally 'there requires' or 'there is needed.'

⁷ See 4, S, b.

⁸ See 4, S, a.

⁹ S as in 'mason' (4, S, d).

¹⁰ See 4, Z, a.

LESSON 3.

The inflection of *èssere*: 53, a.

EXERCISE 3.

[Based on Exercise I, p. ix.]

1. Where¹ are the birds? — 2. It was winter. — 3. We² are in the spring. — 4. The vines will be laden with grapes. — 5. Where¹ would you² be in the winter? — 6. You² are without flowers. — 7. Without the sun it would be cold. — 8. The flowers were in the fields. — 9. Where¹ were you² in the spring? — 10. I² was in the country.

¹ *Dóve*.

² These personal pronouns need not be translated.

LESSON 4.

The inflection of *avère*: 53, b.

EXERCISE 4.

[Based on Exercise I, p. ix.]

1. I¹ have no flowers. — 2. When will they¹ have leaves? — 3. He¹ had apples and pears. — 4. You¹ would have no leaves. — 5. The spring has no snow. — 6. Have you¹ the ears of

corn?—7. They¹ had no figs.—8. When will he¹ have the birds?—9. I¹ should have plums and peaches.—10. The trees had no leaves.

¹ These personal pronouns need not be translated.

LESSON 5.

Articles and nouns : **9 ; 10, a, b ; 11 ; 12 ; 12, a ; 14, a, b ; 15 ; 17 ; 18 ; 19** (in general, nouns in *o* are masculine, nouns in *a* or *u* are feminine) ; **22 ; 23 ; 24 ; 25 ; 51, 2.**

EXERCISE 5.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. A corner.—2. Some corners.—3. Some rooms.—4. The corner of a room.—5. We are in the corner of the room.—6. A man in a room.—7. The man is in the room.—8. The men are in the rooms.—9. I have a gun.—10. You have the gun.—11. With the guns.—12. A city.—13. To the city and for the cities.—14. Some birds on a branch.—15. The birds are on the branches of the trees.—16. The roots of the trees in the wood.—17. The days of the month.—18. The months of a year.—19. The weeks of the year.—20. For the countries of the earth.—21. The prisons in the cities of the kings.—22. With the son of the uncle.¹—23. The uncles¹ are with the fathers of the boys.—24. The poem² is written³ by the boy's uncle.—25. The words are in the poem² written³ by the two poets.⁴

¹ *Zio.* ² *Poëma, m.* ³ *Scritto.* ⁴ *Poëta.*

LESSON 6.

Èssere and *avère* : **53, a, b ; 54 ; 76 ; 80, 1.**

EXERCISE 6.

[Based on the first paragraph of Exercise 2, p. x.]

1. He is a count. — 2. They are noble. — 3. You would be a count. — 4. We shall be noble. — 5. You have been ignorant. — 6. We shall have had the office.¹ — 7. They had had offices and honors. — 8. You are ignorant because you have not studied.² — 9. He had³ the office¹ because he had been a count. — 10. People don't think⁴ that he has⁵ a great mind. — 11. He has had the office,¹ and therefore he has not studied.² — 12. You would have had the office,¹ if you had⁶ studied.² — 13. People thought that he was⁶ born in 1749. — 14. If we had⁶ studied,² we should not be ignorant. — 15. If you were⁶ ignorant, you would be put⁷ to study. — 16. Even if we are ignorant, we shall have offices and honors, because we have been noble. — 17. Although they are⁵ of noble family, they are not ignorant, because they have studied.² — 18. I was⁸ noble, but I was³ put to study, because, as a lad, I had⁸ a great mind. — 19. Although we had⁶ not travelled,⁹ we should not have been ignorant, if we had⁶ studied.² — 20. If you have travelled,⁹ you will have offices and honors, although you have⁵ not studied,² because you will not be ignorant.

¹ *La carica*. ² *Studiato*. ³ Preterite. ⁴ *Non si crede* (see 86). ⁵ Pres. subj. ⁶ Imp. subj. ⁷ *Messi*, plural. ⁸ Imp. ind. ⁹ *Viaggiato*.

LESSON 7.

Regular verbs of the first conjugation : 59 ; 59, a.

EXERCISE 7.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. The birds sang in the spring. — 2. Let us begin to sing. — 3. In the winter the wind will blow hard. — 4. When will they

begin to give us their sweet fruit? — 5. The sun would burn the vines. — 6. When will you sing? — 7. The wind began to blow. — 8. I burn the ears of corn. — 9. I began to sing. — 10. Sing when the wind blows. — 11. I begin to speak. — 12. If¹ he sang,² I should not speak. — 13. If¹ they spoke,² we should begin to sing. — 14. Although³ the wind blows⁴ hard, we shall sing. — 15. Although³ you sing,⁴ we begin to speak.

¹ *Se.* ² Imp. subj. ³ *Benchè.* ⁴ Pres. subj.

LESSON 8.

Regular verbs of the second and third conjugations : **60**
(the list of verbs at the top of p. 58 need not be learned).

EXERCISE 8.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. The flowers fall in the winter. — 2. The trees lost their leaves. — 3. He sees the sun. — 4. Do you believe that¹ I see² the cherries? — 5. He did not believe that¹ the vines lost³ their sweet fruit. — 6. I do not believe that¹ you fall.² — 7. See the trees : they have lost their leaves. — 8. We shall lose the flowers. — 9. When I see the birds, it is spring. — 10. Would you believe that he had³ seen the trees without flowers? — 11. The peas will come forth⁴ in the spring. — 12. They would not come forth⁴ without the sun. — 13. When the snow goes away, we see the peas come forth⁴ in the fields.

¹ *Che.* ² Pres. subj. ³ Imp. subj. ⁴ The infinitive is *ndscere.*

LESSON 9.

Regular verbs of the fourth conjugation : **61.**

EXERCISE 9.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. We felt the cold. — 2. Do you feel the wind? — 3. The winter and the spring will end. — 4. The birds would not feel the heat. — 5. The flowers suffer² when the wind blows. — 6. The birds suffered in the winter. — 7. I do not suffer any more heat. — 8. I do not believe that¹ he suffers.³ — 9. Do you believe that¹ he feels³ the cold? — 10. The summer and the autumn ended.

¹ *Che*. ² *Soffrire* is inflected in the pres. like *sentire*. ³ Pres. subj.

LESSON 10.

Adjectives and pronouns : 26 ; 27 ; 28 ; 29 ; 30 ; 31 ; 33 ; 43 ; 43, a ; 44 ; 45.

EXERCISE 10.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. The poor are always unfortunate. — 2. The high trees are far from the great cities. — 3. The most beautiful plant has the smallest flower. — 4. The largest villa is mine, the smallest is his, and the lowest is theirs. — 5. Many good fathers are now poorer, but their boys and their girls¹ are always honest. — 6. Who were the good girls¹ who spoke to the unhappy sailor? — 7. Whose are the big clubs of which the little boy spoke? — 8. Which are the hard² lessons³ that our poor boys finished in two days? — 9. What is the beautiful story⁴ her little girls¹ believe? — 10. In what far part of your great city are the rooms of the honest merchant, to whom the largest ships of the world belong⁵?

¹ *Ragazza*. ² *Difficile*. ³ *Lezione*, f. ⁴ *Sibria*, f. ⁵ *Appartengono*.

LESSON 11.

Parlère and *crédere* : **59** ; **59, a** ; **60** (the list of verbs at the top of p. 58 need not be learned) ; **62** ; **77** ; **77, a** ; **54, d**.

EXERCISE II.

[Based on the first two paragraphs of Exercise 2, p. x. *Viaggiare* is conjugated with *avère*.]

1. I shall not leave Italy. — 2. They determined¹ to become noble. — 3. They would not leave France. — 4. He will be ashamed of himself. — 5. Let them leave² England. — 6. It is enough to abandon certain habits. — 7. He doesn't believe that Alfieri is ashamed² of himself. — 8. They did not believe³ that we were studying.⁴ — 9. We hoped³ that they would travel through France. — 10. We do not believe that they are studying.² — 11. They speak to you of Victor, and you admire his strong will. — 12. I shall not believe that you have² changed your way of living. — 13. If we spoke⁴ to you of Victor, you would admire his firm will. — 14. Do not believe that the customs of aristocratic youth increase² the glory of Italy. — 15. Study, and you will become an entirely different man from what you are. — 16. We abandoned¹ the habits of aristocratic youth, and travelled¹ through France and England. — 17. Let him not believe² that we admire² the customs of his times. — 18. They think that studying is enough² to change one's mode of life. — 19. If I believed⁴ that studying was⁴ enough, I should abandon the customs of youth. — 20. If I had⁴ not travelled, I should not believe that most of the aristocrats leave² everything in order to study.

¹ Preterite.

² Pres. subj.

³ Imp. ind.

⁴ Imp. subj.

LESSON 12.

Regular verbs : **59** ; **59, a** ; **60** ; **61** ; **62** ; **63** ; **72** ; **75** ; read **47**.

EXERCISE 12.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

1. We know Alfieri. — 2. They amuse themselves. — 3. Let them tie¹ themselves to the arm-chair. — 4. They will know the best writer in Italy. — 5. Feel a desire to make great efforts. — 6. They tied² themselves to the arm-chair. — 7. He knew³ what efforts it would cost him. — 8. Changing one's way of living isn't enough. — 9. It wasn't enough³ for you to go on studying. — 10. When he studies, he doesn't feel a desire to amuse himself.⁴ — 11. By⁵ studying you will come to be one of the glories of our country. — 12. If he tied⁶ himself to the arm-chair, he would feel a desire to study. — 13. As he no longer needs to resort to this means, let him amuse¹ himself. — 14. As he didn't amuse³ himself, he felt² a desire to go out of doors. — 15. If you knew⁶ Alfieri, you would feel a desire to change your mode of life. — 16. If he felt⁶ strong-minded enough to study, he would become the greatest writer in Italy. — 17. Change your way of living, and you will feel a desire to become a great poet. — 18. It isn't true that he knows¹ what efforts it will cost him. — 19. If we had⁶ not felt a desire to go out of doors, we should not know such a great poet. — 20. By⁵ amusing himself,⁴ he will come, little by little, to need to make great efforts.

¹ Pres. subj. ² Pret. ³ Imp. ind. ⁴ Add *si* to the end of the verb.
⁵ Omit. ⁶ Imp. subj.

LESSON 13.

Review Lesson 1.

EXERCISE 13.

Pronounce Exercise 2. Inflect the future of *ammirare*, the conditional of *studiare*, the present indicative of *viaggiare*, the preterite of *vergognare*, the imperfect indicative of *sperare*, the imperfect subjunctive of *giovare*, the imperative of *mutare*, the pre-

sent subjunctive of *determinare* (*determini*, etc.), the future of *abbandonare*, the conditional of *lasciare*, the present indicative of *legere*, the preterite of *proseguire*.

LESSON 14.

Conjunctive personal pronouns : **46 ; 47 ; 48** (study this paragraph with the greatest care), with footnotes ; **48, a, b, c ; 49 ; 50 ; 86.**

EXERCISE 14.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. He will finish it. — 2. I speak to myself. — 3. You believe one another. — 4. The boys have the same clubs that belong¹ to us. — 5. Speak of it to them. — 6. We speak of them to him. — 7. Your poor father had a beautiful carriage: he sent² it to me. — 8. You have a large plant: give it to me. — 9. The Italian had some birds: he sent² them to you. — 10. I speak to him: he believes me. — 11. I begin to³ speak to them. — 12. You have some parrots: give them to him. — 13. He had a bird: he sent² it to them. — 14. I have sent² it to her. — 15. You have some little birds: give me some.

¹ *Appartengono.*

² Use *mandare.*

³ *A.*

LESSON 15.

Irregular verbs ; *andare* : **64 ; 65 ; 66 ; 66, b ; 67 ; 92 ; 92, a, b, c, d, f** (p. 87) ; **92, 1 ; 78, d.**

EXERCISE 15.

Inflect the present indicative of *condurre* (*conducendo, conduco*), the present subjunctive of *dire* (*dicendo, dica*), the imperfect indicative of *fare* (*facendo*), the imperfect subjunctive of *muovere*

(*movendo*), the preterite of *piacere* (*piacqui*), the imperative of *scuotere* (*scotendo*), the future of *fare*, the conditional of *trarre*.

LESSON 16.

Review Lesson 15.

EXERCISE 16.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

1. Keep on studying. — 2. We resorted¹ to this means. — 3. You went² out of doors. — 4. They were beginning¹ to study. — 5. Go and have yourself³ tied to the arm-chair. — 6. Let them go and amuse themselves. — 7. You no longer resort to this means. — 8. Let us go and amuse ourselves.⁴ — 9. We knew² what efforts would be necessary. — 10. We went² and tied ourselves⁴ to the arm-chairs. — 11. When I go to study, I do not need to resort to these means. — 12. Alfieri went² and had himself tied to the arm-chair. — 13. By⁵ going to study, we shall come to be great poets. — 14. When I felt¹ a desire to go out of doors, I used to go¹ and study. — 15. If our will got⁶ the upper hand, we should go and study. — 16. If we went⁶ and studied, we should not need to change our mode of life. — 17. When your will gets⁷ the upper hand, you will go and study. — 18. If Alfieri had⁸ gone to amuse himself, Italy would not now have so great a poet. — 19. When they go and study, they no longer need to have themselves tied to their arm-chairs. — 20. If they kept⁶ their promise, they would not need to have themselves tied to the arm-chair.

¹ Imp. ind. ² Pret. ³ *Vi.* ⁴ *Ci.* ⁵ Omit. ⁶ Imp. subj. ⁷ Future.
⁸ Imp. subj. of *essere*.

LESSON 17.

Disjunctive personal pronouns : **51** ; **51, b** ; **52** ; **73** ; **74** ;
 review Lesson 14.

EXERCISE 17.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. He spoke of it to us, to you, and to them. — 2. They believe us. — 3. They speak of themselves, and we speak of ourselves. — 4. She has finished it. — 5. Who will speak with me? — 6. You are very good, Mr. B. — 7. I speak to you, little boy, and to him. — 8. He is the boy of whom I spoke. — 9. Madam,¹ you have been² very unfortunate. — 10. Little boys, you will be surprised. — 11. I begin, Mr. B., to believe your words. — 12. They have spoken of it to us and to you. — 13. Do not think of³ them : think of³ her. — 14. Will you speak of it to him or to me? — 15. Mr. B. and Mr. D., you are unfortunate: the great trees near your villa belong⁴ to two merchants, and not to you.

¹ *Signóra.*

² Fem.

³ *A.*

⁴ *Apparténgono.*

LESSON 18.

The whole chapter on Personal Pronouns (pp. 36-44), except the Exercises at the end.

EXERCISE 18.

[Based on the second paragraph of Exercise 2. In all sentences in which the second person is used, translate it in three ways.]

1. Open your eyes, and you will be thoroughly ashamed of yourselves. — 2. Do not open them ; if¹ you opened² them, you would be ashamed. — 3. They have left us ; do not abandon us. — 4. I have determined to accustom myself to live in such a way. — 5. By³ accustoming yourself to study, you will become an entirely different man. — 6. I hope so⁴ ; I am ashamed to⁵ live in such a way. — 7. They had accustomed themselves to leave everything. — 8. Are you ashamed to give up your habits? — 9. He says so⁴ to me and to you ; he has determined to give

them up. — 10. Does he say so ⁴ to you? — 11. He will leave it to us. — 12. She might leave them to me. — 13. He wishes to ³ keep them. — 14. It will not be at all an easy matter for ⁶ you. — 15. I should be ashamed of it.

¹ *Se.* ² Imp. subj. ³ Omit. ⁴ 'It.' ⁵ *Di.* ⁶ *Per.*

LESSON 19.

Irregular verbs of the first conjugation : **92**, 1, 2, 3, 4 ; read **79**, *b* (including 1, 2, 3, pp. 77 and 78).

EXERCISE 19.

[Based on Exercise 2.]

1. Let us give them the offices. — 2. We have made good resolutions. — 3. They had not given the office to Alfieri. — 4. I don't go and study: I am ¹ talking. — 5. We shall be ¹ admiring Alfieri's tragedies. — 6. If I made ² good resolutions, I should go and study. — 7. I don't think that the difficulty lies ³ in making good resolutions. — 8. If he were ¹ always ⁴ talking, he would not do anything.⁵ — 9. Do everything, but don't go and live in such a way. — 10. We do not believe that rank gives ³ them a right to everything. — 11. By ⁶ giving them everything, he would be able to change his mode of life. — 12. You used to go ⁷ and study, and that gave ⁷ you ⁸ a right to the greatest honors. — 13. If you went ² and amused yourself,⁸ they would not give you ⁸ the office. — 14. They used to make ⁷ good resolutions, but the difficulty was ⁷ in keeping them. — 15. If we gave ² them the office, the difficulty would be in making them study. — 16. By ⁶ resolving to abandon the customs of aristocratic youth, he would do himself ⁹ honor. — 17. When you make ¹⁰ a good ¹¹ resolution, you will go and study; and then they will give you ⁸ everything. — 18. Let them resolve to study, and let them go to the Academy of Turin. — 19. Their rank gives them a right to offices, even if they do not resolve to change their way of living. — 20. He

did not resolve¹² to study, but went¹² and amused himself; and therefore they did not give¹² him offices nor honors.

¹ Use *stare*. ² Imp. subj. ³ Pres. subj. ⁴ *Sempre*. ⁵ *Nulla*. ⁶ Omit.
⁷ Imp. ind. ⁸ *Vi*. ⁹ *Si*. ¹⁰ Future. ¹¹ *Buon* (29, c). ¹² Pret.

LESSON 20.

The whole chapter on Articles (pp. 7-10), except the Exercises at the end.

EXERCISE 20.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

1. I am a poet. — 2. Alfieri, a writer who began to study at twenty-seven, became a great poet. — 3. Habits bind us. — 4. Writers have to resort to this means. — 5. The mind makes an effort. — 6. Great efforts are hard. — 7. He goes to amuse himself with the poets. — 8. Knowing the habits of writers, I had him tied to his arm-chair. — 9. Mr. Alfieri studies in my arm-chair. — 10. Mr. Alfieri, you will go to Italy.

LESSON 21.

Irregular verbs of the second conjugation: **92**, 5-14; **57** (study the examples with particular care); **54**, *a*. Note that *piacere* is intransitive: 'it pleases him' = *gli piace*.

EXERCISE 21.

[Based on Exercise 1.]

1. He does not know when string beans come forth. — 2. The snow fell in the winter. — 3. The fig-trees ought to have given us their sweet fruit. — 4. They are sitting in the gardens. — 5. You will see them in the spring. — 6. The leaves would be lying in the fields. — 7. Do you like apricots¹? — 8. Be silent! I do not like fruit. — 9. Birds are wont to sing in the spring. — 10. I ought to begin.

¹ 'Do apricots please you?'

LESSON 22.

Review Lesson 21.

EXERCISE 22.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the
Grammar.]

1. We have had¹ to keep still : we do not know his name. —
2. It fell² and lay² three days on the ground. — 3. He was
sitting³ in the room where his brother lay.³ — 4. When I see⁴
them, I shall have¹ to keep still, because I do not know their
names. — 5. He saw² me, but I didn't suit² him. — 6. Do
you know where he is sitting? — 7. They are lying under the
table : don't you see them? — 8. If I saw⁵ him, I should have¹
to speak to him. — 9. They will not know where we have seen
them. — 10. See her : she doesn't know that we have⁶ come
back. — 11. Has she seen these plants? Do they suit her? —
12. He doesn't believe that I know⁷ his name. — 13. Let us see
where they are going. — 14. It lies there, where it has⁶ fallen. —
15. When I saw² that they had⁶ fallen, I was silent.² — 16. You
saw² my coat : how⁸ did it suit² you? — 17. If we had⁵ seen
them fall, we should know where they are. — 18. He didn't be-
lieve⁸ that they were lying⁵ on the table. — 19. They don't be-
lieve that you see⁷ them. — 20. If they keep still, we shall not
know where they have been.

¹ Use *dovere*. ² Pret. ³ Imp. ind. ⁴ Future. ⁵ Imp. subj.
⁶ Use *essere*. ⁷ Pres. subj. ⁸ *Cóme*.

LESSON 23.

Irregular verbs of the second conjugation : **92**, 15-23 ;
57 ; **45**, *c*. *Dolere* takes an *indirect* object.

EXERCISE 23.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. My eyes pain me ; I don't want to stay. — 2. We shall not be able to persuade him ; he doesn't want to keep still. — 3. If we were not able¹ to stay, it would grieve him very much.² — 4. They were in the habit³ of staying⁴ five days. — 5. If he were holding¹ it, he would let⁵ it fall. — 6. They seem large, but they cannot be good. — 7. He wanted⁶ to go, but he could⁶ not : I held⁶ him. — 8. You will not persuade me : I shall not be willing to do it. — 9. We saw⁶ them : they are not worth anything.⁷ — 10. If he doesn't want to stay, I'll hold him. — 11. He remained⁶ three days, because his head pained⁸ him. — 12. It grieved⁶ me, but I had⁶ to do it. — 13. I don't believe that it hurts⁸ him very much.² — 14. If you wish it, they will stay with you. — 15. I have seen them this year ; they seemed⁶ very little to me : I should have thought that they were not worth¹ anything.⁷ — 16. You don't believe that he is willing⁸ to stay. — 17. If you wanted¹ to stay, you wouldn't be able to sit down. — 18. If you don't believe that I can⁸ keep still, don't remain here. — 19. He cannot stay : he has to go and study. — 20. Let them remain there, if they don't want to come back.

¹ Imp. subj. ² *Mólto*. ³ Imp. ind. ⁴ 'Of staying' = '(to) stay.'
⁵ *Lasciáre*. ⁶ Pret. ⁷ *Niènte*. ⁸ Pres. subj.

LESSON 24.

Auxiliary verbs : **53**, *a, b* ; **54** ; **54**, *a, b, c, d, e* ; **55** ; **57** ; read the synopses in **56**. Note that *andáre* is conjugated with *éssere*.

EXERCISE 24.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. I shall have finished the poem.¹ — 2. They had built² a city. — 3. We should have spoken.³ — 4. He will have gone. — 5. You would have come.⁴ — 6. The poor boys who have come⁴ to the city have spoken of it to their mothers. — 7. We have finished our questions, but they have been very short. — 8. The villas which the boy's father has built² are the most beautiful in the world. — 9. The great⁵ duke has gone to speak to the unhappy sailors who have come⁴ to our city. — 10. If I had⁶ come,⁴ they would have sent me to the city. — 11. I do not believe that he has⁷ come.⁴ — 12. We should not have believed that you had⁶ spoken of it to him. — 13. If I had⁶ spoken of it, he would have sent it to me. — 14. If they had⁶ sent it to her, she would have come⁴ to speak of it to me. — 15. We believed that the largest prisons in the city had⁶ been built² by an unhappy king, whose father was an Italian duke.

¹ See Ex. 5, note 2. ² Use *costruire*. ³ Two translations. ⁴ *Venire*, p. p. *venuto*, aux. *essere*. ⁵ See 29, c. ⁶ Imp. subj. ⁷ Pres. subj.

LESSON 25.

Regular verbs: **58**; **58, a**; **59**; **59, a**; **60**; **61**; **62**; **63**; read **77, d, f, g, h**. *Sentire* means "to feel."

EXERCISE 25.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. The year ends with December. — 2. We speak of these things, but you don't believe us. — 3. I don't believe that the year ends¹ with December. — 4. Finish all the things that you have begun. — 5. He didn't believe² that we felt³ the heat. — 6. You related⁴ many things, but I didn't believe⁴ them all. —

7. They feel the heat, but they don't observe the smoke. — 8. If he hastened,³ they would flee. — 9. The water boils, but we don't feel the heat. — 10. What prevents us from⁶ observing these objects? — 11. Let us hasten: they will eat⁶ everything. — 12. If I repeated³ these things, you would learn them. — 13. Let them believe everything: they will not prevent me from⁶ thinking. — 14. You haven't learned those things: I repeat them to you. — 15. You don't believe that he repeats¹ everything. — 16. Observe them: they are hastening; where are they fleeing? — 17. I didn't finish⁴ it: they prevented⁴ me from⁶ hastening. — 18. If he thought³ that you were not observing³ him, he would eat⁶ everything. — 19. Learn everything, and repeat it to me in⁷ two days. — 20. We shall study three years; by⁸ studying we shall learn everything.

¹ Pres. subj. ² Imp. ind. ³ Imp. subj. ⁴ Pret. ⁵ *Di*, with infin.
⁶ *Mangiare*. ⁷ *Fra*. ⁸ Omit.

LESSON 26.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: **92**, 24-73 (omitting forms enclosed in parentheses and all verbs marked *poetical* or *rare*); **69**; **70**; **91**, *a*.

EXERCISE 26.

[Based on the first paragraph of Exercise 2. The forms of irregular verbs not yet learned may be found in the List, pp. 101 ff.]

If I should speak¹ to you of Victor, you would admire his strong, firm will. He was born² in 1749, of a noble family of Piedmont; he is a count. Nowadays³ we don't believe that being noble is enough⁴ to make us worth something; therefore most young men study, and are worth something, because they know that, if they are ignorant, their rank alone will not give them a right to offices and honors. But Victor, as a lad, studied carelessly; and, although he has⁴ a fine mind, he is ignorant, and doesn't know anything at all. We sent him to the Academy

of Turin. But he didn't know that talent is of no use without study; and a few years later he came out without having studied nor even travelled, and without knowing that study is worth something. He didn't admire the Academy, and he didn't speak of it; he couldn't study, and he didn't know anything at all, because he thought it was enough⁵ to have a fine mind. He was noble, but they didn't give² him offices nor honors, because he was ignorant.

¹ Imp. subj. ² Pret. ³ *Oggidì.* ⁴ Pres. subj. ⁵ Imp. subj.

LESSON 27.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: **92**, 75-124 (omitting forms enclosed in parentheses and all verbs marked *poetical* or *rare*); **87**; **88**; **89**.

EXERCISE 27.

[Based on the second paragraph of Exercise 2. The forms of irregular verbs not yet learned may be found in the List. *Vivere* is conjugated with *avére*.]

He arrived at the age of twenty-seven, and then, one fine day, he opened his eyes. Now¹ he is thoroughly ashamed of himself, and hopes that by changing his mode of life he will be able to become an entirely different man from what he has been. He has perceived his ignorance, and has resolved to give up the habits that he has formed during a long course of years; he has determined to accustom himself to study. He says to himself: "It will not cost much to make good resolutions; the difficulty will be in keeping them. But I shall keep them — I shall accustom myself to living in an entirely different way from formerly — I shall leave everything in order to study. I resolve to change my mode of life. It will be no small matter, because I have lived hitherto² in an entirely different way; and when we live in such a way, we form³ certain customs — but I shall not notice it: by studying and keeping my good resolutions I shall accustom myself to such a life. I will do it. I

should like to be a credit to Italy. I perceive my ignorance, and I am ashamed of myself."

¹ *Adêssô.* ² *Finôra.* ³ See p. 97, no. 132.

LESSON 28.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation : **92**, 126-148 (omitting forms enclosed in parentheses).

EXERCISE 28.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

Victor knew that he would have to make great efforts, that it wasn't enough to feel a desire to study, and that he would have need of great strength of mind ; but he said ¹ to himself that little by little his will would get the upper hand, and that by continuing to study he would come to be a good writer. He understood and perceived what efforts it would cost him ; but he resolved to change his mode of life, and he kept his promise. It is true that it cost him great efforts. He no longer went ² out of doors. When he felt a desire to amuse himself instead of studying, he had to have himself tied to his arm-chair. But little by little he became a great poet, and came to have no more need of having himself tied. Then ³ he knew that he had got the upper hand, and said ⁴ to himself : " I shall not resort to this means any longer : I have no more need of it. I shall begin to study, I shall resolve to go on, and I shall keep my promise. I can and will do it. I have changed my way of living. It has been hard — I know what efforts it has cost me ; but now ⁵ I shall not tie myself any more. I make promises and keep them : my will has got the upper hand."

¹ *Dictôva.* ² *Uscôva.* ³ *Allôra.* ⁴ *Dîsse.* ⁵ *Ôra.*

LESSON 29.

Personal pronouns : **46** ; **47** ; **47**, *a* ; **48** ; **48**, *a, b, c, d* ; **49** ; **50** ; **51** ; **51**, *a, b* ; **52** ; **55**.

EXERCISE 29.

[Based on Exercise 1. Translate the second person in three ways.]

1. When will you begin to sing to us? — 2. Have you burned yourself? — 3. Seeing you in the garden, I called you. — 4. Finish it in the summer. — 5. Having finished them, you will give them to us. — 6. Do not give it to them. — 7. I should have given them to you. — 8. Give me your cherries. — 9. Have you any of these pears? — 10. Give her some. — 11. What is your name¹? — 12. I could have given it to you. — 13. Is it necessary to give it to me? — 14. I should make him begin it. — 15. Give it to me. — 16. Sing it to them. — 17. Do not burn yourself. — 18. I am calling: is it you? — 19. I gave it to you and to him. — 20. Have you lost your apples? — 21. I ought to have called you. — 22. Let her see it. — 23. You can see me, but I cannot see you. — 24. He sees the birds, but they do not see him. — 25. Let me see some.

¹ 'How (*cóme*) do you call yourself?'

LESSON 30.

Irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation: **92**, 149-161; **82**; **84**. *Morire* is conjugated with *essere*.

EXERCISE 30.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. See Naples¹ and then die. — 2. They opened the window. — 3. Let them cover themselves and remain covered. — 4. We don't open the door; the wind has opened it. — 5. If I sew all² day, I shall die. — 6. They have built a great village. — 7. If they die, we shall bury them in the grove. — 8. I don't believe that you are dying.³ — 9. What are they filling? They offer me water. — 10. The boy has died, and his parents are burying him. — 11. He will fill it, and then he will offer it to you. — 12. Our friends, who died last year, are buried in the wood. — 13. Do

you believe that he is building³ a villa? — 14. If I suffered⁴ as my parents have suffered, I should die. — 15. While they were building⁵ the city, many men died. — 16. He suffered⁵ always, because he didn't digest⁵ the food. — 17. Offer him bread: perhaps he will digest it. — 18. We suffer — we are too unfortunate: let us die. — 19. I eat⁶ this bread because you have offered it to me; but I don't digest it. — 20. If he dies, he will not be buried, but the birds will cover him with⁷ leaves.

¹ *Nàpoli.* ² 'All the.' ³ Pres. subj. ⁴ Imp. subj. ⁵ Imp. ind.
⁶ *Mangiàre.* ⁷ *Di.*

LESSON 31.

Irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation: 92, 162-168.

EXERCISE 31.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar.*]

1. You tell it to me, but I don't hear you. — 2. I go out every day. — 3. Hear me: I shall tell you everything. — 4. We went up, but our friends didn't come. — 5. He tells me that they have¹ come. — 6. He opens the door, but he doesn't go out. — 7. I tell you that he will come. — 8. Thus speaking, I open the door and go out. — 9. They told him that you would come. — 10. He built himself a villa in the grove, and then he died. — 11. We told them that he had built a villa. — 12. We come, we go up, and we come out, but we don't disappear. — 13. We have told him that you are coming. — 14. I come here to see everything: they are building me a villa. — 15. If I told² you everything, you would die. — 16. You³ have opened the door; but if you³ go out, you³ die. — 17. They come and disappear. Where do they go? Tell me, do they all die? — 18. I don't believe that they are going up.⁴ Let them come, and they shall hear me. I shall say to them: "I came, I saw, I conquered."⁵ — 19. He says that he will come; he comes; he disappears;

and we do not know where he has¹ gone. — 20. He came — I heard him open the door; he went up, and then he disappeared. I came out, but I did not see him: he had¹ died. We came here to find him, and we buried him in the wood.

¹ Use *essere*. ² Imp. subj. ³ Second pers. sing. ⁴ Pres. subj. ⁵ *Vincere*, irreg. verb.

LESSON 32.

The whole chapter on Auxiliary Verbs (pp. 47-54), except Exercise 13 at the end. See also 42.

EXERCISE 32.

Translate Exercise 14 on p. 55.

LESSON 33.

Regular verbs, and irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation: 58; 58, *a*; 59; 59, *a, b*; 60; 61; 62; 63; 63, *a*; 92, 149-168.

EXERCISE 33.

Translate Exercise 16 on pp. 64, 65.

LESSON 34.

Irregular verbs of the first and second conjugations: 66, *a, b, c*; 68, *a, b*; 92, *a, b, c, d*; 92, 1-23.

EXERCISE 34.

Inflect: the preterite of *fāre, sapēre, dovēre, vedēre, piacēre, dolēre, rimanēre, tenēre, valēre, volēre, parēre, potēre, persuadēre*; the imperfect indicative and subjunctive of *fāre, giacēre, volēre*; the imperative of *vedēre, rimanēre, tenēre*.

LESSON 35.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: 92, *e, f, g*; 92, 24-148.

EXERCISE 35.

Translate the first half of Exercise 18 on p. 73.

LESSON 36.

The whole chapter on Moods and Tenses (pp. 65-72).

EXERCISE 36.

Translate the second half of Exercise 18 on pp. 73, 74.

LESSON 37.

The whole chapter on Nouns and the whole chapter on Adjectives (pp. 11-22), except Exercise 6 at the end.

EXERCISE 37.

Translate Exercises 2 (p. 11) and 4 (p. 17).

LESSON 38.

The whole chapter on Demonstrative, Interrogative, Relative, and Possessive Pronouns (pp. 30-34); the whole chapter on Indefinite Pronouns (pp. 84-87), except the long list on p. 86 and the Exercise at the end.

EXERCISE 38.

Translate Exercises 6 (p. 23) and 10 (p. 35).

LESSON 39.

The whole chapter on Personal Pronouns (pp. 36-44), except Exercise 11 at the end.

EXERCISE 39.

Translate Exercise 12 on pp. 45, 46.

LESSON 40.

The whole chapter on Augmentatives, Diminutives, and Numerals (pp. 23-28), except Exercise 7 at the end.

EXERCISE 40.

Translate Exercise 8 on p. 29.

LESSON 41.

The whole chapter on Conjunctions, Prepositions, and Adverbs (pp. 74-82), except the two long lists and Exercise 19 at the end.

EXERCISE 41.

Translate Exercise 20 on p. 84.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.



PRONUNCIATION.

1. The Italian alphabet has the same letters as the English, except that *h*, *w*, *x*, and *y* do not occur in modern Italian.

2. The Italians distinguish seven vowels: *a*, close *e*, open *e*, *i*, close *o*, open *o*, *u*; each of which always has the same sound, no matter what may be its position in the word, and never tends, as do the English long vowels, to become a diphthong. Italian vowels are all pronounced very quickly; hence there is but little difference in quantity between accented and unaccented sounds. English-speaking students must carefully avoid drawling the accented and slighting the unaccented syllables; they should try to give to every Italian vowel about the length of *i* in "bitter."

A is nearly like *a* in "father": as *fava*, *canna*, *cassa*, *palla*.

E, close, is nearly like *a* in "fate": as *beve*, *vere*, *stelle*, *messe*.

E, open, may be formed by trying to pronounce *e* in "bell" with the mouth very wide open: as *bella*, *amena*, *fera*, *pensa*.

I is nearly like *ee* in "feet": as *miri, vini, fissi, spilli*.

O, close, is nearly like *o* in "mope": as *dopo, dove, bollo, sotto*.

O, open, is nearly like *aw* in "saw" pronounced with the mouth wide open: as *no, odi, poi, donna*.

U is nearly like *oo* in "boot": as *una, cura, nulla, ruppi*.

a. The letters *i* and *u* are sometimes used to represent consonant sounds (see 4); but in formulating rules they are always counted as vowels.

3. As close and open vowels are not distinguished in spelling, some rules are necessary:—

(1) Unaccented *e* and *o* are always close: as *mare*, "sea"; *amo*, "I love."

(2) *E* and *o* are close in all monosyllables* ending in a consonant: as *con*, "with"; *non*, "not"; *per*, "for."

(3) In monosyllables* and oxytones† ending in a vowel, final *e* is close, final *o* is open: as *che*, "what"; *me*, "me"; *re*, "king"; *credè*, "he believed"; *perchè*, "why"; *do*, "I give"; *Po*, "Po"; *sarò*, "I shall be"; *andò*, "he went." Exceptions: final *e* is open in *è* = "is," *re* = "re," interjections (as *aimè*, "alas"; *chè*, "nonsense"), proper names (as *Noè*, "Noah"), and foreign words (as *caffè*, "coffee"); final *o* is close in *lo* and *o*.

(4) Accented *e* and *o* are always open in the groups *ie* and *uo*: as *piède*, "foot"; *fuoco*, "fire." *E* and *o* standing for *ie* and *uo* are open: as *ven* = *viene*, "he comes"; *cor* = *cuore*, "heart."

* Not including shortened forms of words that regularly have more than one syllable.

† Words accented on the last syllable.

(5) In words that have always formed a part of the spoken language, accented *e* is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ē* or *ĕ*, open when it represents Latin *ĕ* or *æ*; accented *o* is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ō* or *ŭ*, open when it represents Latin *ō* or *au*. In book words accented *e* and *o* are usually open.

In all cases not covered by the first three rules, the quality of *e* and *o* will be marked in this book, an acute accent (´) denoting the close, a circumflex (^) the open sound: as *avére*, "to have"; *méno*, "less"; *tiène*, "he holds"; *liète*, "happy"; *poêta*, "poet"; *óra*, "hour"; *mólto*, "much"; *buôno*, "good"; *pôco*, "little"; *môto*, "motion."

4. B, f, m, p, q, v are pronounced as in English.

C before *e* or *i* sounds like *ch* in "chin"; elsewhere it is always like English *k*: as *cima*, "top"; *cóme*, "how"; *dólce*, "sweet." **G** before *e* or *i* sounds like *g* in "gem"; elsewhere it is always like *g* in "go": as *gatto*, "cat"; *gênte*, "people"; *spingi*, "push."

a. A *cc* or a *gg* before *e* or *i* has merely the sound of *ch* in "chin" or *g* in "gem" prolonged: as *facce*, "faces"; *légge*, "law."

D, l, n, t are pronounced further forward in the mouth than in English; the tip of the tongue should touch the back of the upper front teeth: as *alto*, "high"; *dato*, "given"; *luna*, "moon"; *nudo*, "naked"; *tuôno*, "thunder."

H is always silent: as *ahi*, "oh!" *ha*, "he has."

I, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *y*: as *ièri*, "yesterday"; *paio*, "pair"; *più*, "more." In the groups *cia*, *cio*, *ciu*, *gia*, *gio*, *giu*, an unaccented *i* serves only to show that the *c* or *g* is soft: as *faccia*,

“face”; *guancia*, “cheek”; *ciò*, “that”; *giù*, “down”; *mangia*, “eat”; *raggio*, “ray.”

J is merely another way of writing *i*.

N before a *q* or a hard *c* or *g* has the sound of English *ng*: as *banca* (*bang-ka*), “bank”; *dunque* (*dung-kwe*), “therefore”; *lungo* (*lung-go*), “long.”

R is always rolled, the point of the tongue vibrating against the teeth: as *caro*, “dear”; *rosso*, “red”; *per*, “for.” When *r* is double or followed by a consonant, the trill is prolonged: as *carro*, “cart”; *burro*, “butter”; *marrone*, “chestnut”; *carne*, “meat”; *pòrta*, “door.”

S is generally pronounced nearly like English *s* in “see,” but with a somewhat sharper sound: as *sò*, “I know”; *spillo*, “pin.”

Initial *s* before a sonant (*b*, *d*, *g*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, *v*) has a sound intermediate between *s* and English *z*: as *sdrucchiolare*, “to slip”; *slitta*, “sleigh.”

A single *s* between vowels has, in most words, the sound of English *z*: as *caso*, “case”; *cáusa*, “cause”; *viso*, “face.” But in the following cases it is pronounced like *s* in “see,” “mason”:—

a. In *annusare*, *ásino*, *casa*, *Chiusi*, *còsa*, *così*, *desidèrio*, *naso*, *parasito*, *pésò*, *Pisa*, *pisèllo*, *pòsa*, *ripòso*, *riso*, *susina*, and their derivatives, and in some uncommon words.

b. After the prefixes *de-*, *dì-*,* *pre-*, *pro-*, *re-*, *ri-*, *tra-**: as *desistere*, *disègno*, *presumere*, *proseguire*, *reservare*, *risolvere*, *trasudare*.

c. In the adjective ending *-òso* and the adjective and substantive ending *-ése*: as *noiòso*, “troublesome”; *inglèse*, “English”; *mése*, “month.” But in *cortése*, *francése*, *lucchése*, *marchése*, *paése*, *palése*, the *s* is like English *z*.

* Not to be confounded with *dis-*, *tras-*: *disonóre*, *trasandare*.

(*d.* In the preterites and past participles of *chièdere*, *chiùdere*, *nascòndere*, *pòrre*, *ràdere*, *ridere*, *rimanère*, *rispòndere*, *ròdere*, and all verbs in *-endere*; and in their compounds and derivatives: as *chièsi*, *socchiuso*, *nascòse*, *rispòsero*, *rasòio*, *rimase*, *corrispòsi*, *ròsero*, *accèsi*, *rèso*, *scèsa*. Exceptions to this rule are *deridere*, verbs in *-chùdere*, and derivatives of *ròdere*.)

U, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *w*: as *buòno*, "good"; *guardare*, "to look"; *può*, "he can."

Z and **zz** are generally pronounced like a long and vigorous *ts*: as *alzare*, "to lift"; *aziòne*, "action"; *prèzzo*, "price"; *zìo*, "uncle."

In the following cases, however, *z* and *zz* sound like a prolonged *dz*:—

a. In *azzurro*, *dozzina*, *mèzzo*, *pranzo*, *ribrèzzo*, *romanzo*, *zèlo*, and many less common words.

b. In verbs in *-izzare* (as *utilizzare*, "to utilize"); except *attizzare*, *dirizzare*, *guizzare*, *rizzare*, *stizzare*, and their compounds, and a few uncommon words.

5. The following combinations are to be noted:—

Ch (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *k*: as *fichi* (plural of *fico*, "fig"). **Sch** is like *sk*: as *schèrzo*, "sport."

Gh (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *g* in "go": as *aghi* (plural of *ago*, "needle").

Gli (written *gl* if the following vowel be *i*) is nearly like English *lli* in "million": as *figlio*, "son"; *figli*, "sons." But in *Ànglia*, *geroglífico*, *glicerina*, *negligere* and its derivatives, and a few uncommon words borrowed from the Greek or Latin, *gl* is like English *gl*.

Gn is nearly like *ni* in "onion": as *ògni*, "every."

Qu is always like *kw*: as *quèsto*, "this."

Sc before *e* and *i* is nearly like *sh* in "ship": as *uscire*, "to go out." Before all other letters it is pronounced *sk*: as *scuòla*, "school"; *schérno*, "contempt."

6. Every letter in Italian is distinctly and separately sounded; the only exceptions are *h*, silent *i* (see **4**), and the combinations mentioned in **5**. Ex.: *arte*, "art"; *firma*, "signature"; *furto*, "theft"; *giórno*, "day"; *vérso*, "toward"; *andái*, "I went"; *aura*, "breeze"; *bugie*, "lies"; *Euròpa*, "Europe"; *mièi*, "my"; *paúra*, "fear"; *sentíi*, "I felt"; *suòi*, "his."

Where a double consonant is written, both letters must be sounded, the first at the end of the preceding, the second at the beginning of the following syllable: as *anno*, "year"; *babbo*, "father"; *fatto*, "done"; *mésso*, "put"; *quéllo*, "that." For *rr*, *zz*, and soft *cc* and *gg*, see **4**.

L, *m*, *n*, and *r*, when preceded by an accented vowel and followed by another consonant, are prolonged: as *alto* (*all-to*), "high"; *sempre* (*sémm-pre*), "always"; *tanto* (*tann-to*), "so much"; *parte* (*parr-te*), "part."

7. The accent is nearly always the same as in Latin. In this book it will always be noted. Of the signs written here, students need use only the grave (`), which is placed on the last syllable of oxytones and on some monosyllables; Italian writers do not agree as to the use of the other marks; some use the acute, and not the grave, on final *e*.

8. Italian words are divided in such a way that, if possible, every syllable shall begin with a consonant: as *ta-vo-lí-no*, "table"; *frat-tán-to*, "meanwhile"; *al-l' uò-mo*, "to the man"; *nar-rá-re*, "to relate"; *mèz-zo*, "half"; *các-cia*, "hunt"; *òg-gi*, "to-day."

In the groups *s* + consonant, consonant + *r*, those mentioned in 5, and *cl*, *fl*, *gl*, *pl*, both consonants belong to the following syllable. *I = y* and *u = w* go with the following vowel; *di*, *du*, *ei*, *eu*, *oi* are not separated. Ex.: *al-l' du-ra*, *a-vrò*, *bi-sò-gno*, *ca-stì-ghi*, *del-l' ac-qua*, *in-chiò-stro*, *mièi*, *mi-gliò-re*, *ri-flèt-te-re*, *te-à-tro*, *tudì*.

ARTICLES.

9. The article is not declined, but it agrees with its substantive in gender and number.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

10. Masculine :—

a. Sing. *il*, pl. *i*, before a word beginning with any consonant except *s* impure* and *z*.

b. Sing. *lo*, pl. *gli*, before a vowel or *s* impure or *z*.†

Before a vowel *lo* becomes *l'*; *gli* becomes *gl'* before *i*.

Ex.: *Il pàdre*, the father; *i pàdri*, the fathers.

Lo stèsso pàdre, the same father.

Lo scidme, the swarm; *gli scidmi*, the swarms.

Lo zio, the uncle; *gli zii*, the uncles.

L' uòmo, the man; *gl' insètti*, the insects.

11. Feminine :—

Sing. *la*, pl. *le*.

Before a vowel *la* becomes *l'*; *le* becomes *l'* before *e*.

Ex.: *La mādre*, the mother; *le mādri*, the mothers.

L' òra, the hour; *le òre*, the hours; *l' èrbe*, the herbs.

* That is, *s* followed by another consonant.

† *Li* is sometimes used for *gli*. Some writers use *il*, *i* before *z* and before *sce-* or *sci-*. In poetry *lo* is often used for *il*.

12. When the definite article is preceded by one of the prepositions *di, da, a, in, con, su, per*, the article and preposition are generally contracted into one word, as shown in the following table (*con, per* are often uncontracted):—

	IL	I	LO	GLI	LA	LE	L'
<i>Di</i> , of	<i>del</i>	<i>dèi</i> or <i>de'</i>	<i>dèllo</i>	<i>dègli</i>	<i>dèlla</i>	<i>dèlle</i>	<i>dell'</i>
<i>Da</i> , by	<i>dal</i>	<i>dài</i> or <i>da'</i>	<i>dàllo</i>	<i>dàgli</i>	<i>dàlla</i>	<i>dàlle</i>	<i>dall'</i>
<i>A</i> , to	<i>al</i>	<i>dài</i> or <i>a'</i>	<i>àllo</i>	<i>àgli</i>	<i>àlla</i>	<i>àlle</i>	<i>all'</i>
<i>In</i> , in	<i>nel</i>	<i>nèi</i> or <i>ne'</i>	<i>nèllo</i>	<i>nègli</i>	<i>nèlla</i>	<i>nèlle</i>	<i>nell'</i>
<i>Con</i> , with	<i>col</i>	<i>còi</i> or <i>co'</i>	<i>còllo</i>	<i>cògli</i>	<i>còlla</i>	<i>còlle</i>	<i>coll'</i>
<i>Su</i> , on	<i>sul</i>	<i>súi</i> or <i>su'</i>	<i>sùllo</i>	<i>sùgli</i>	<i>sùlla</i>	<i>sùlle</i>	<i>sull'</i>
<i>Per</i> , for	<i>pel</i>	<i>pèi</i> or <i>pe'</i>	<i>per lo</i>	<i>per gli</i>	<i>per la</i>	<i>per le</i>	<i>per l'</i>

Ex.: *Del pàdre*, of the father; *dài pàdri*, by the fathers.
Àllo spècchio, to the mirror; *nègli spècchi*, in the mirrors.
Còlla màdre, with the mother; *còlle màdri*, with the mothers.
Sull' uòmo, on the man; *per gli uòmini*, for the men.

a. The word "some" is frequently rendered in Italian by *dì* with the definite article. This is called the partitive genitive.

Ex.: *Dàtemi del vïno*, give me some wine.
Dèlle bèlle còse, some fine things.

13. In the following cases the definite article is used in Italian, though not in English:—

a. Before the possessive pronouns: as *il nòstro giardìno*, "our garden"; *i sùbi fratèlli*, "his brothers." When, however, the possessive qualifies an otherwise unmodified noun in the singular expressing relationship, the article is generally omitted: as *mia màdre*, "my mother." For a fuller statement see 45, a.

b. Before an abstract noun or one denoting a whole class, unless the sense is partitive.

Ex.: *L'uòmo propòne*, man proposes.

I fióri nàscono dal sème, flowers spring from the seed.

La mòrte è il peggióre déi máli, death is the worst of evils.

c. Before a noun and adjective used either in a specific or in a general (but not in a partitive) sense.

Ex.: *L'ánno scórso*, last year (*i. e.*, the last year).

Il pòvero Lutgi non viène, (the) poor Lewis doesn't come.

Gli uòmini buòni, good men (*i. e.*, all good men).

d. Before a title followed by a proper name: as *la regina Vittòria*, "Queen Victoria"; *il signór Brúni*, "Mr. Brown." It is not used, however, before *Don*, *Messér*, and *Ser*.

e. Before family names; often before given names of women; occasionally before given names of well-known men.

Ex.: *Il Bidnchi è mòrto*, White is dead; *la Pátti cànta*, Patti sings.

Conòsco l' Olvívia, I know Olivia; *Dánte* or *il Dánte*, Dante.

f. Before names of countries and continents: as *la Svizzera*, "Switzerland"; *all' Itàlia*, "to Italy"; *per l' Euròpa*, "for Europe." But the article is omitted after *in* in phrases that denote going to or dwelling in a country; and often after *di* or *in* when the preposition with the name of a country is equivalent to an adjective of nationality: as *vádo in Germánia*, "I go to Germany"; *rimángo in Fráncia*, "I remain in France"; *la regina d' Inghiltèrra*, "the queen of England"; *il víno di Spáña*, "the wine of Spain"; *il téatro in Itàlia*, "the drama in Italy."

In all the above cases (beginning with **13**, a) the article, unless it would be employed in English, is omitted when the noun is used as a vocative or is modified by a numeral or a pronominal adjective. It is often omitted in lists.

Ex.: *Questa sua ópera*, this work of his.

Signóra Mònti, còme sta, Mrs. Monti, how do you do?

Itàlia, ti rivédo, Italy, I see thee again.

Féde, speránza, carità, faith, hope, and charity.

Vièni, amico mio, come, my friend.
Ha parecchi vizî, he has several bad habits.
Due bellissimoi cani, two very fine dogs.

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

14. Masculine :—

a. *Un* before a vowel or any consonant except *s* impure and *z*.

b. *Uno* before *s* impure or *z*. *

Ex. : *Un padre*, a father ; *un uomo*, a man.

Un anello, a ring ; *uno specchio*, a mirror.

Uno sciame, a swarm ; *uno zio*, an uncle.

15. Feminine :—

Una, which becomes *un'* before a vowel.

Ex. : *Una madre*, a mother ; *un' ora*, an hour.

16. In the following cases the indefinite article, though expressed in English, is omitted in Italian :—

a. Before a predicate noun expressing occupation, rank, or nationality, and not accompanied by an adjective.

Ex. : *Egli è poeta*, he is a poet ; *sono marchese*, I am a marquis.

Siete italiano, you are an Italian.

b. Generally before an antecedent (of a relative clause) used in apposition to a preceding noun modified by a definite article or a demonstrative pronoun.

Ex. : *L' Arno, fiume che traversa Firenze*, the Arno, a river which traverses Florence.

c. After *da* meaning "as," "like," or "for." See **79**, *g*.

Ex. : *Da uomo*, like a man.

* Some writers use *un* before *z* and before *sce-* or *sci-*.

EXERCISE 1.

La parte più alta del nostro corpo è il capo. Il capo è attaccato
highest is is attached
 al collo, e il collo è attaccato al tronco. La parte davanti del
front
 capo si chiama viso. Nel viso ci sono la fronte, gli occhi, il
is-called there are eyes
 naso, la bocca, il mento. Cogli occhi si vedono le cose. Col
we-see things
 naso si sentono gli odori. Colla bocca si mangia, si beve, si
we-smell odors we-eat we-drink we-
 respira. Respirare è mandare l'aria giù nel petto, e poi riman-
breathe
 darla fuori.) Noi respiriamo l'aria. Levate un pesce dall'acqua,
it We breathe Take
 muore: levate l'aria a noi, e noi morremo.
it-dies take from us shall-die.

EXERCISE 2.

Mr. Rossi is a merchant. Leaving Italy, he-went-away last
è Lasciando partì
 year to France, a country which he-wished to-visit with his brother
per voléva visitàre
 and a friend of the family. But he-returned to Italy the same
tornò in
 month, saying: "Travelling¹ bores-me. Another time I-shall-make
dicéndo viaggiàre (m.) mi sécca Un'altra farò
 a study of the customs of France. Paris is a big city; we-have-
costúmi (m. pl.) gránde vi abbiamo
 seen some² fine things; but I-prefer the land of Garibaldi and
vedúto belle cose (f. pl.) mi piàce piú
 of King Victor Emmanuel."

¹ See 13, b.² See 12, a.

NOUNS.

17. Italian nouns are not declined. Possession is denoted by the preposition *di*: as *lo spécchio di mio pádre*, "my father's looking-glass."

GENDER.

18. There are no neuter nouns in Italian.*

Nouns denoting males and females keep their natural gender: except *guida*, "guide"; *guardia*, "guard"; *persóna*, "person"; *sentinèlla*, "sentinel"; *spia*, "spy"; *vedétta*, "scout"; which are feminine.

Ex.: *Il fratello*, the brother; *mia sorella*, my sister.

Il poeta, the poet; *la poetessa*, the poetess.

Una spia, a spy; *la nostra guida*, our guide.

19. Of nouns denoting objects without sex some are masculine, some feminine. Their gender can often be determined by the final letter. All Italian nouns end in *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, or *u*: †—

a. Those ending in *a* are feminine; except *colèra*, "cholera," *qualcosa*, "something," Greek neuters in *-ma*, ‡ many geographical names, and a few other words, mostly foreign.

Ex.: *Un' ora*, an hour; *un telegramma*, a telegram.

Il Canadà, Canada; *il sofà*, the sofa.

b. Of those ending in *e* and *i* some are masculine, some feminine. All ending in *-zione*, *-gione*, or *-udine* are feminine.

Ex.: *Il fiume*, the river; *la pace*, peace.

Un dì, a day; *una metropoli*, a metropolis.

La ragione, the reason; *la servitùdine*, service.

c. Those ending in *o* are masculine; except *máno*, "hand."

Ex.: *Il ginòchio*, the knee; *la máno*, the hand.

* Latin neuters become masculine in Italian; masculines and feminines retain their Latin gender. This rule has very few exceptions.

† A few foreign nouns used in Italian end in a consonant: as *lápis*, "pencil" (*i lápis*, "the pencils"). Nouns in *-o* or *-e* often drop that vowel if the preceding consonant is *l*, *n*, or *r*: as *cdne*=*can*, "dog."

‡ Mostly scientific terms.

d. Those ending in *u* are feminine ; except *soprappiù*, “surplus,” and a few foreign words.

Ex. : *La virtù*, virtue ; *il bambù*, bamboo.

20. Any other part of speech (except an adjective*) used as a noun must be masculine.

Ex. : *Il viaggiare*, travelling.

21. Masculine names of trees in *o* or *e* have a feminine form in *a* or *e* respectively, denoting their fruit ; but *il dattero*, “date,” *il fico*, “fig,” *il limone*, “lemon,” *il pomo*, “apple,” are always the same, whether denoting the tree or the fruit.

Ex. : *Un sustno*, a plum-tree ; *una sustna*, a plum.
Il nóce, the walnut-tree ; *la nóce*, the walnut.
Questi fichi, these fig-trees, these figs.

NUMBER.

22. Feminines in unaccented *a* form their plural by changing *a* into *e*.

Ex. : *La strada*, the street ; *le strade*, the streets.
Una bugia, a lie ; *le bugie*, lies.

a. Feminines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-che* and *-ghe* respectively (the *h* being inserted merely to indicate that the *c* and *g* keep their hard sound).

Ex. : *Un' óca*, a goose ; *mólte óche*, many geese.
La bottéga, the shop ; *parécchie bottéghe*, several shops.

* Adjectives of course have the gender of the nouns they represent.

b. Nouns in unaccented *-cia* and *-gia* form their plural in *-ce* and *-ge* respectively.*

Ex.: *La guancia*, the cheek; *le guance*, the cheeks.
Una ciliegia, a cherry; *tante ciliege*, so many cherries.

23. Masculines in unaccented *a* and all nouns in unaccented *o* and *e* (not *ie*) form their plural in *i*. †

Ex.: *Un poeta*, a poet; *due poeti*, two poets.
Lo zio, the uncle; *gli zii*, the uncles.
La mano, the hand; *le mie mani*, my hands.
Un mese, a month; *tre mesi*, three months.
La cornice, the frame; *quattro cornici*, four frames.

a. Masculines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-chi* and *-ghi* respectively.

Ex.: *Il monarca*, the monarch; *i monarchi*, the monarchs.
Il collèga, the colleague; *i collèghi*, the colleagues.

b. Nouns in unaccented *-io* form their plural by changing *-io* to *-i* (often written *ì*, *j*, or *ii*).

Ex.: *Lo specchio*, the mirror; *gli specchi*, the mirrors.
Il ciliègio, the cherry-tree; *i ciliègi*, the cherry-trees.

c. Nouns in *-go* form their plural in *-ghi*. Nouns in *-co* form their plural in *-chi* if the penult is accented, otherwise in *-ci*.

Ex.: *Il castigo*, the punishment; *i castighi*, the punishments.
Un catálogo, a catalogue; *due cataloghi*, two catalogues.
Il fico, the fig; *cinque fichi*, five figs.
Antico, ancient; *gli antichi*, the ancients.
Un medico, a doctor; *sèi mèdici*, six doctors.

This rule has a number of exceptions. In the following lists, words whose irregular plural is rare are omitted.

* *Provincia* has *provincie*. In general borrowed words and words whose plural is necessarily very rare keep the *i*: *audacia*, *audacie*.

† In old Italian and in poetry words in *-ello* and *-ale* often form their plural in *-egli* or *-ei*, *-agli* or *-ai*: *capèllo*, *capèi*.

(1) Compound nouns in *-logo* denoting persons engaged in the sciences, and all compound nouns in *-fago* form their plural in *-gi*.*

Ex.: *Il fisiòlogo*, the physiologist; *i fisiòlogi*, physiologists.
Antropòfago, cannibal; *antropòfagi*, cannibals.

(2) The following words form their plural in *-ci*, although the penult is accented:—

amíco grêco inimíco nemíco pôrco †

Grêco has a regular plural in the expression *vini grêchi*.

(3) The following words form their plural in *-chi*, although the penult is unaccented:—

ábbaco fármaco lástrico rammárico stráscico
acròstico índaco mánico rísico tóssico
cárico † intónaco pároco sciático tráffico
diméntico † intrínseco pízzico stòmaco válico §

Acròstico and *fármaco* have also regular plurals.

d. Some masculines in *o* have an irregular plural in *a*; this plural is feminine. They are: *centináio*, “hundred”; *migliáio*, “thousand”; *migliò*, “mile”; *páio*, “pair”; *uòvo*, “egg.”

Many masculines in *o* have this irregular feminine plural in *a* besides the regular masculine plural in *i*. The most common are: *bráccio*, “arm”; *dito*, “finger”; *frútto*, “fruit”; *ginòcchio*, “knee”; *grído*, “shout”; *lábbro*, “lip”; *légno*, “wood”; *mèmbro*, “member”; *múro*, “wall”; *orécchio*, “ear”; *òsso*, “bone.”

* Likewise the rare or obsolete words: *flemmagògo*, *idragògo*, *metallùrgo*, *sàrgo* (also reg. plur.), *sortilego*. “Magicians” = *màghi*, “magi” = *màgi*.

† Likewise the rare words: *aprico*, *lombrico* (also reg.), *uvamico*, *vico*.

‡ Likewise its compounds.

§ Likewise the rare or obsolete words: *filáccico*, *mántaco* (also reg.), *stático*, *sfiláccico*, *stático* (noun), *úncico*.

Ex.: *Un páio*, a pair; *sétte páia*, seven pairs.

Il mio bráccio, my arm; *le tue bráccia*, thy arms.

Il lábbro, the lip; *le lábbra* or *i lábbri*, the lips.

Un ósso, a bone; *le óssa* or *gli óssi*, the bones.

Bráccio, *ginóccchio*, *lábbro*, and *orecchio* nearly always have the irregular plural when denoting the two arms, knees, lips, or ears belonging to the same body.

24. All monosyllables, and all nouns ending in *i*, *ie*, *u*, an accented vowel, or a consonant, are invariable.

Ex.: *Il re*, the king; *i re*, the kings.

Il brúdisi, the toast; *i brúdisi*, the toasts.

Una spèce, a kind; *óttó spèce*, eight kinds.

La virtù, virtue; *le virtù*, the virtues.

Una città, a city; *dièci città*, ten cities.

25. The following nouns have irregular plurals: *búe*, "ox," pl. *buòi*; *dío*, "god," pl. *dèi**; *móglie*, "wife," pl. *mógli*; *uòmo*, "man," pl. *uòmini*.

EXERCISE 3.

Gli uccèlli, le farfàlle, i pésci, il cáne, il mício, le lucètole sóno¹ tútti animáli. Il gátto e il cáne sóno¹ animáli che háanno² quáttro gámbe, háanno³ quáttro pièdi, e però si chiámáno⁴ quadrúpedi. Il leóne è¹ il piú bèllo e il piú maestóso déi quadrúpedi. Gli uccèlli háanno² dúe zámpe; ed háanno³ le áli e con le áli vólano.⁵ Anche le farfàlle háanno² le áli, ánche le ápi háanno² le áli, e vólano.⁵ Le mósche, le zanzáre, le vèspe, e pòi mólti áltri animálfni, símili a quèsti, si chiámáno⁴ insètti. Gli uccèlli e gl' insètti náscono⁶ dálle uòva. Tútti quèsti animáli vívono⁷ in mèzzo all' ária. I pésci vívono⁷ in mèzzo all' ácqua. I pésci non háanno² gámbe; háanno³ dálle párti quélle alettíne; e con quèste píccole

* The article used with *dèi* is *gli*: *gli dèi*.

alétte e con la códa nuôtano⁸ e guízzan⁹ vía nell' ácqua, lèsti lèsti cóme un lámpo. Quélle alétte si chiámáno⁴ pínne. Le lucêrtole stríscian¹¹ su' múri, háanno³ délle zampíne, ma rasênti rasênti al còrpo, e quándo si muôvono¹⁰ ánche súlla têrta, strísciano.¹¹ Le sêrpi non háanno² gámbe ; e quèsti animáli che non háanno² gámbe e che strísciano¹¹ sulla têrta, cóme le lucêrtole e le sêrpi, si chiámáno⁴ rêtili.

¹ È = is; *sóno* = are. ² Have. ³ They have. ⁴ *Si chiámáno* = are called. ⁵ They fly. ⁶ Are born. ⁷ Live. ⁸ They swim. ⁹ Dart. ¹⁰ *Si muôvono* = they move. ¹¹ Crawl, they crawl.

omit.
EXERCISE 4.¹

Mignonettes are² born from the seed. The seed, placed under ground, has³ sprouted ; from one side it-has³ put-out⁴ shoots, which have-spread-out⁵ through⁶ the ground, and from one side it-has³ sent forth the stalk, the little-branches,⁷ the leaves, and⁹ the flowers. Like mignonettes,⁸ many other²⁶ plants, herbs, and⁹ flowers spring¹⁰ from the seed. Flowers, herbs, grain, and trees are-called¹¹ vegetables. Vegetables have³ roots, trunk, branches, twigs, leaves, flowers, and⁹ fruit. Plants first produce¹² the flower and then the fruit. The trunk or stalk of plants is² that¹³ which rests¹⁴ on the roots and¹⁵ comes¹⁶ out from the ground ;¹⁷ it-is-covered¹⁸ with¹⁹ branches and with¹⁹ leaves. Of the stalk of plants, — for instance, of the trunk of trees, — we-make-use²⁰ for many purposes ; we-make²¹ furniture, doors, windows, the beams that support²² ceilings, ships, carriages, and⁹ cars. The branches of trees are-burned,²³ and give-us²⁴ fire. Vegetables in-order-to²⁵ live have³ need of earth, of water, and⁹ of light.

¹ See 13, b. ² Is = è; are = *sóno*. ³ Has, it has = *ha*; have = *hanno*. ⁴ *Méso*. ⁵ *Si sóno distése*. ⁶ *Fra*. ⁷ *Ramicélli*. ⁸ Insert "and so." ⁹ Omit. ¹⁰ *Ndscono*. ¹¹ *Si chiámáno*. ¹² *Fánno*. ¹³ *Quéllo*. ¹⁴ *Pósa*. ¹⁵ Insert "which." ¹⁶ *Viéne*. ¹⁷ Insert "and." ¹⁸ *Si ricudpre*. ¹⁹ *Di*. ²⁰ *Ci servidmo*. ²¹ *Facciámo*. ²² *Réggono*. ²³ *Si brúciano*. ²⁴ *Ci dámmo*. ²⁵ *Per*. ²⁶ Many other = *mólte áltre*.

ADJECTIVES.

26. Adjectives agree with their substantives in gender and number. An adjective modifying two nouns of different genders is generally put in the masculine plural.

Ex.: *Il gatto è pulito*, the cat is neat; *stanze pulite*, neat rooms.
Una casa e un giardino bellini, a pretty house and garden.

27. Numeral and pronominal adjectives, *bello*, *bravo*, *buono*, and the commonest adjectives of size and quantity, precede their nouns; adjectives of nationality, shape, and material follow. Adjectives whose use is prompted by emotion, and adjectives used in a figurative sense, generally precede. Otherwise, of the noun and adjective, the one that contains the chief idea comes last.

Ex.: *Troppo pane*, too much bread; *le grandi città*, great cities.
Questa palla rotonda, this round ball; *due cani*, two dogs.
La buona madre, the good mother; *poor uomo*, poor man!
La vostra gentilissima lettera, your kind letter.
È un uomo gentilissimo, he is a kind man.

GENDER AND NUMBER

28. Adjectives ending in *o* are masculine, and form their feminine in *a*. Adjectives in *e* are invariable in the singular.

Ex.: *Buono stivalotto*, good boot; *buona scarpa*, good shoe.
Ragazzo felice, happy boy; *ragazza felice*, happy girl.

29. Adjectives form their plural in the same way as nouns (see **22**, **23**).

Ex.: *Six buoni cassettoni*, six good bureaus; *otto buone seggiole*, eight good chairs.
Due uomini felici, two happy men; *tre donne felici*, three happy women.

a. *Parécchi*, "several," has for its feminine *parécchie*.

b. *Qualche*, "some," is used only in the singular, even when the meaning is plural: as *qualche volta*, "sometimes."

c. When preceding a noun, *bèllo*, "beautiful," has forms similar to those of the definite article; and *Sánto*, "Saint," and *gránde*, "great," have corresponding forms in the singular.* *Buòno*, "good," when preceding its noun, has a singular similar to the indefinite article. The masculine of these words (which is the only irregular part) is, therefore, as follows:—

Before any consonant except *s* impure or *z*: *bel*, *San*, *gran*, *buon*;
pl. *bèi*, *Sánti*, *grándi*, *buòni*.

Before *s* impure or *z*: *bèllo*, *Sánto*, *gránde*, *buòno*; pl. *bègli*, *Sánti*,
grándi, *buòni*.

Before a vowel: *bell'*, *San'*, *grand'*, *buon*; pl. *bègli*, *Sánti*, *grándi*,
buòni.

When used *after* a noun or in the predicate these adjectives have their full forms (*bèllo*, *bèlli*, *Sánto*, *Sánti*, *gránde*, *grándi*, *buòno*, *buòni*).

Ex.: *Un bel quádno*, a fine picture; *dúe bèi létti*, two fine beds.

Un bèllo scaffále, a fine bookcase; *quáttro bègli stívdi*, four fine boots.

Un bell' ándito, a fine hall; *mólti bègli orológi*, many fine clocks.

Una bèlla stúfa, a fine stove; *parécchie belle ténde*, several fine curtains.

Il palázno è bèllo, the palace is fine; *le sédie son belle*, the chairs are beautiful.

San Piétro, Sánto Stéfano e Sant' António, St. Peter, St. Stephen, and St. Anthony.

Un gran fuòco, a big fire; *grándi camini*, big fire-places.

* *Gran* is, moreover, often used in the fem. sing. (for *gránde*), and sometimes in the plur. (for *grándi*); it is regularly used before fem. sing. nouns in *-e*, and in the expression *úna gran bèlla* (or *brúta*) *cósa*.

Il grande scaldino, the big foot-warmer; *dieci grandi spilli*, ten big pins.

Un grande sciame, a great swarm; *il grande zibolo*, the large bung.

Un grand' armadio, a big wardrobe; *venti grandi alberi*, twenty big trees.

Una grande camera, a large bedroom; *cinque grandi finestre*, five big windows.

Il salotto è molto grande, the parlor is very large.

Un buon lume, a good lamp; *buoni fiammiferi*, good matches.

Il buono sgabello, the good stool; *nove buoni scolari*, nine good pupils.

Il buon olio, the good oil; *parecchi buoni aghi*, several good needles.

Una buona cucina, a good kitchen; *le buone candele*, the good candles.

Il bambino è buono, the child is good.

30. Any adjective of either gender or either number may be used as a noun.

Ex.: *I buoni*, the good; *la bella*, the beautiful woman.

√

COMPARISON.

31. All Italian adjectives form their comparative by prefixing *più* "more," and their superlative by prefixing the definite article to the comparative. When the superlative immediately follows the noun, this article is omitted.

Ex.: *Bello*, beautiful; *più bello*, more beautiful; *il più bello*, the most beautiful.

Lungo, long; *più lungo*, longer; *il più lungo*, the longest.

La via più corta, the shortest way.

a. The following adjectives have an irregular comparison in addition to the regular one: —

Alto, high; *più alto* or *superiore*; *il più alto* or *il superiore*.

Basso, low; *più basso* or *inferiore*; *il più basso* or *l' inferiore*.

Buòno, good; *più buòno* or *miglióre*; * *il più buòno* or *il miglióre*.

Cattivo, bad; *più cattivo* or *peggióre*; * *il più cattivo* or *il peggióre*.

Grànde, big; *più grànde* or *maggióre*; *il più grànde* or *il maggióre*.

Piccolo, small; *più piccolo* or *minóre*; *il più piccolo* or *il minóre*.

“Higher” and “lower” are commonly rendered by *più álto* and *più bàsso*; *superióre* and *inferióre* generally mean “superior” and “inferior.” *Miglióre* and *peggióre* are more used than *più buòno* and *più cattivo*, which have the same sense. “Larger” and “smaller” are generally *più grànde* and *più piccolo*; *maggióre* and *minóre* usually signify “older” and “younger.”

Ex.: *Noi siamo migliori di loro*, we are better than they.

Questa sala da pranzo è la più grande, this dining-room is the biggest.

Pietro è il fratello minore, Peter is the youngest brother.

32. The adverb “less” is expressed by *méno*, “least” by *il méno*. “As . . . as,” “so . . . as” are *tánto . . . quánto*, *tánto . . . cóme*, *così . . . cóme*, or simply *quánto*.

Ex.: *Quella stanza è la meno bellina*, that room is the least pretty.

Paolo non è tanto buono come Roberto, Paul isn't so good as Robert.

Giovanni è alto quanto Filippo, John is as tall as Philip.

33. “Than” is *che*.

Ex.: *L'albergo è più grande che bello*, the hotel is bigger than it is beautiful.

But before a noun, a pronoun, or a numeral “than” is rendered by the preposition *di* (see **12**). If, however, this “than” is preceded by a word meaning “rather,” it is translated *che*.

* The adverbs “better” and “worse” are *méglio* and *peggio*.

Ex.: *Riccardo è peggiore di me*, Richard is worse than I.
Voi siete più ricchi di noi, you are richer than we.
Méno di cinque, less than five.
Piuttôsto la morte che il disonore, rather death than dishonor.

Before an inflected verb "than" is *che non* or *di quel che*.
 If the verb has a negative subject, "than" is *che*.

Ex.: *Abbàia più che non morde*, he barks more than he bites.
Prométto méno di quel che do, I promise less than I give.
Più lieto che nessun figlio lo era stato, happier than any son had been.

34. "The more . . . the more," "the less . . . the less" are *più . . . più, méno . . . méno*. "More" and "less" after a number are *di più, di méno*. In speaking of time, "longer" after a negative is *più*.

Ex.: *Più stúdio, più impáro*, the more I study, the more I learn
Trent'è giorni di méno, thirty days less.
Non lo vediámo più, we see him no longer.

EXERCISE 5.

Il sóle è¹ un glôbo grandissimo e sêmpre infocáto: éssò è¹ gránde óltre un milióne di vólte più délla têrra; e díre² che a' nôstri ócchi apparisce³ tánto più píccolo! Anche la lúna, che splênde⁴ duránte la nôtte, è¹ rotónda, ma è¹ mólto più píccola délla têrra, e gira⁵ intórno a quéstà⁶ continovaménte. La lúna non ha¹ lúce da sè, ma la ricéve⁷ dal sóle. Ecco⁸ perchè la lúna óra la vediámo⁹ e óra non la vediámo⁹ più, óra ne vediámo⁹ mêtta, óra uno spícchio, óra un po' più, óra un po' méno, secóndo che di éssa ci si presênta¹⁰ úna pártè maggióre o minóre illumináta dal sóle. Le stéllè sóno¹ tútti quéi¹¹ púnti luminósi che vediámo⁹ brilláre di¹² nôtte nel firmaménto. Non crediáte,¹³ però, che le stéllè síano¹ píccole cóme noi le vediámo⁹: ci páiono¹⁴ cosí píccíne per la smisuráta distánza che córre¹⁵ da lóro a noi; ma le stéllè sóno¹ grandissime, e ce n'è di quélle¹⁶ che sóno¹ in-

finitaménte piú grándi del sóle. Gli è¹ che il sóle è¹ méno lontano di ésse dálla têrra che nói abitiámo.¹⁷

¹ È = is; *sóno, stano* (subj.) = are; *ha* = has. ² To think. ³ It seems. ⁴ Shines. ⁵ Turns. ⁶ It. ⁷ *La ricéve* = receives it. ⁸ That is. ⁹ *Vedidmo* = we see; *la vedidmo* = we see it; *le vedidmo* = we see them; *ne vedidmo* = we see of it. ¹⁰ *Ci si presénta* = there presents itself to us. ¹¹ Those. ¹² At. ¹³ *Non credidte* = do not think. ¹⁴ *Ci pdiono* = they seem to us. ¹⁵ Intervenes. ¹⁶ *Ce n' è di quélle* = there are some. ¹⁷ Inhabit.

EXERCISE 6.

The moon is¹ in the middle of² the sky. The moon is¹ round; it-looks³ perfectly round like a melon. And it-looks,³ too, as big as a melon. The moon seems⁴ little because it-is¹ far, far from us who are⁵ on the earth. The moon renders⁶ a great service to men: because when everything is¹ dark, it⁷ illumines⁸ with its beautiful light the earth which we-inhabit.⁹ The stars are¹⁰ larger than the moon, but to-look-at-them¹¹ they-seem¹² smaller, because they-are¹⁰ so-much¹³ further than the moon. The most beautiful,¹⁴ the most intense¹⁴ light comes¹⁵ from the sun.

¹ È. ² A. ³ *Par* or *páre*. ⁴ *Si véde*. ⁵ *Siámo*. ⁶ *Fa*. ⁷ *Éssa*. ⁸ *Rischidra*. ⁹ *Abitiámo*. ¹⁰ *Sóno*. ¹¹ *A vedérle*. ¹² *Pdiono*. ¹³ *Tánto*. ¹⁴ Both adjectives follow the noun. ¹⁵ *Viéne*.

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS.

AUGMENTATIVE AND DIMINUTIVE ENDINGS.

35. Instead of a word expressing size or quality the Italians often use a suffix. This suffix may be added to a noun, an adjective, or an adverb. When added to an adjective, and generally when added to a noun, it takes the gender of the word to which it is affixed: occasionally,

however, a suffix with masculine termination is added to a feminine noun, which thereby becomes masculine. A word loses its final vowel before a suffix; but the preceding consonant, if it be *c* or *g*, must keep its former quality: as *Cárl*o + *ino* = *Carlino*, *vóce* + *óne* = *vocióne*, *póco* + *ino* = *pochino*, *adágio* + *ino* = *adagino*.

a. The commonest ending is *-issimo* (fem. *-issima*), "very," which in general is added only to adjectives and adverbs. Adverbs in *-mente* add the *-issima* before the *-mente* (see 85). Any adjective may take it, and it is very often used in cases where it would be entirely superfluous in English.

Ex.: *Lárgo*, wide; *larghissimo*, very wide.
Béne, well; *bentissimo*, very well.
Gránde, big; *grandissimo*, very big.
Fa un tèmpo bellissimo, it's beautiful weather.
Bellissimamente, very beautifully.

b. The principal suffix denoting bigness is *-óne*; it is always masculine, but has a rare feminine form, *-óna*.

Ex.: *Lábro*, book; *libróne*, big book.
Cása, house; *casóne*, large house.
Bóccia, decanter; *boccióna*, big decanter.

c. The most important suffixes denoting smallness are *-ino*, *-cino*, *-icino*, *-étto*, *-éllo*, *-céllo*, *-icéllo*, *-aréllo*, *-eréllo*, *-óttö*, *-úccio*, *-úzzo*, *-uólo*, with their fem. *-ina*, etc. These endings, especially *-úccio*, are often used to express affection; some of them may be used to express pity or contempt. *Ótto* sometimes means "somewhat large" instead of "small."

Ex.: *Sorélla*, sister; *sorellina*, little sister.
*Béll*o, beautiful; *bellino*, pretty.
*Brútt*o, ugly; *bruttino*, rather ugly.
Piázza, square; *piazzétta*, little square.
Giórgio, George; *Giorgétto*, Georgie.

Campana, bell; *campanello*, little bell.

Áquila, eagle; *aquilotto*, eaglet.

Casa, house; *casotta*, rather large house.

Giovanni, John; *Giovannuccio*, dear little Johnny.

Pazzo, mad; *pazzarella*, poor mad woman.

Povero, poor; *poverini*, poor things!

d. The ending *-accio* denotes worthlessness.

Ex.: *Roba*, stuff, goods; *robdaccia*, trash.

Tempo, weather; *tempaccio*, nasty weather.

Alfredo, Alfred; *Alfredaccio*, naughty Alfred.

36. Of the endings added to nouns *-ino* is by far the most common; the only ones that are freely used to form new compounds are *-ino*, "little," *-one*, "great," *-uccio*, "dear," and *-accio*, "bad." In very many cases endings lose their character of independent suffixes, and become inseparable parts of certain words, whose meanings they often change: as *scála*, "stairway"; *scaltino*, "stair"; *scalétto*, "ladder." Some suffixes (as *-uolo*) are rarely used except in this way. Others (as *-cino*, *-icino*, *-ello*, *-cello*, *-icello*, *-arello*, *-erello*) cannot be attached to any word at pleasure, their use being determined by precedent or euphony.

37. Sometimes several suffixes are added at once to the same word: as *ladro*, "thief"; *ladrone*, "terrible thief"; *ladroncèllo*, "terrible little thief."

NUMERALS.

38. The cardinal numerals are:—

1, <i>úno.</i>	5, <i>cínque.</i>	9, <i>nóve.</i>	13, <i>trédici.</i>
2, <i>dúe.</i>	6, <i>séi.</i>	10, <i>dièci.</i>	14, <i>quattordici</i>
3, <i>tre.</i>	7, <i>sétte.</i>	11, <i>úndici.</i>	15, <i>quíndici.</i>
4, <i>quáttro.</i>	8, <i>óttó.</i>	12, <i>dòdici.</i>	16, <i>sédici.</i>

17, <i>diciasette.</i>	26, <i>ventisèi.</i>	50, <i>cinquanta.</i>	125, <i>cento venti-</i>
18, <i>diciotto.</i>	27, <i>ventisette.</i>	60, <i>sessanta.</i>	<i>cinque.</i>
19, <i>diciannove.</i>	28, <i>ventotto</i> or	70, <i>settanta.</i>	200, <i>dugento</i> or
20, <i>venti.</i>	<i>vent' otto.</i>	80, <i>ottanta.</i>	<i>duecento.</i>
21, <i>ventuno</i> or	29, <i>ventinove.</i>	90, <i>novanta.</i>	250, <i>dugento cin-</i>
<i>vent' uno.</i>	30, <i>trenta.</i>	100, <i>cento.</i>	<i>quanta.</i>
22, <i>ventidue.</i>	31, <i>trentuno</i> or	101, <i>centuno</i> or	300, <i>trecento.</i>
23, <i>ventitrè.</i>	<i>trent' uno.</i>	<i>cent' uno.</i>	400, <i>quattrocento.</i>
24, <i>ventiquattro.</i>	32, <i>trentadue.</i>	105, <i>centocinque.</i>	1000, <i>mille.</i>
25, <i>venticinque.</i>	40, <i>quaranta.</i>	115, <i>centoquindici.</i>	2000, <i>due mila.</i>

Uno has a feminine *una*; when used *adjectively* it has the same forms as the indefinite article; so also *ventuno*, etc. The plural of *mille* is *mila*. "A million" is *un milione* or *millione*, of which the plural is *milioni* or *millioni*.

(1) No conjunction is used between the different parts of a number: as *dugento quaranta*, "two hundred and forty." No indefinite article is used before *cento* and *mille*: as *cento libri*, "a hundred books."

(2) *Cento*, *dugento*, etc., when followed by another numeral of more than two syllables may lose the final syllable *-to*: as *seicento cinquanta* or *seicencinquanta*, "six hundred and fifty."

(3) "Eleven hundred," "twelve hundred," etc., must be rendered *millecento*, *mille dugento*, etc.: as *mille ottocento ottantasette*, 1887.

(4) "Both," "all three," etc., are *tutti* (fem. *tutte*) *e due*, *tutti* (fem. *tutte*) *e tre*, etc.

a. If the noun modified by *ventuno*, *trentuno*, etc., follows this numeral, it should be in the singular; if it precedes, in the plural.

Ex.: *Sessantuna lira* or *lire sessantuna*, 61 francs.

b. In dates the definite article is prefixed to the number representing the year, if that number follows a preposition, or does not follow the name of a month.

Ex. : *Nel mille ottocènto ottantasètte*, in 1887.

c. "What time is it?" is *che òra è?* "It is six," etc., is *sòno le sèi*, etc., *òre* being understood. "One o'clock" is *il tòcco*.

Ex. : *Sòno le due e mèzzo*, it's half-past two.

Sòno le tre e dièci, it's ten minutes past three.

Ci mancano vènti minùti àlle quàttrò, it's twenty minutes to four.

Sòno le cinque mèno un quàrto, it's a quarter to five.

39. The ordinal numerals are : —

1st, <i>primo</i> .	12th, <i>duodécimo</i> or	20th, <i>ventèsimo</i> .
2d, <i>secòndo</i> .	<i>décimo secòndo</i> .	21st, <i>ventèsimo primo</i> or
3d, <i>tèrzo</i> .	13th, <i>tredicèsimo</i> or	<i>ventunèsimo</i> .
4th, <i>quàrto</i> .	<i>décimo tèrzo</i> .	22d, <i>ventèsimo secòndo</i>
5th, <i>quìnto</i> .	14th, <i>quattordicèsimo</i> or	or <i>ventiduèsimo</i> .
6th, <i>sèsto</i> .	<i>décimo quàrto</i> .	30th, <i>trentèsimo</i> .
7th, <i>sèttime</i> .	15th, <i>quindicèsimo</i> or	100th, <i>centèsimo</i> .
8th, <i>ottàvo</i> .	<i>décimo quìnto</i> .	101st, <i>centèsimo primo</i> .
9th, <i>nòno</i> .	16th, <i>décimo sèsto</i> .	115th, <i>centoquindicèsimo</i> .
10th, <i>décimo</i> .	17th, <i>décimo sèttime</i> .	200th, <i>ducentèsimo</i> .
11th, <i>undécimo</i> or	18th, <i>décimo ottàvo</i> .	1000th, <i>millèsimo</i> .
<i>décimo primo</i> .	19th, <i>décimo nòno</i> .	2000th, <i>duemilèsimo</i> .

All of them form their feminines and plurals like other adjectives in *o*.

Ex. : *Le settantèsime quìnte còse*, the 75th things.

a. Ordinal numerals are used after the words "book," "chapter," and the names of rulers ; but no article intervenes.

Ex. : *Càrlo secòndo*, Charles the Second ; *Pio nòno*, Pius IX.

Libro tèrzo, Book the Third ; *capitolo quàrto*, chapter four.

b. For the day of the month, except the first, a cardinal number is used.

Ex. : *Il dè cinque d' aprìle* or *il cinque aprìle*, the fifth of April.

Il primo di màggio, the first of May.

c. "A third," "a fourth," "a fifth," etc., are *un tèrzo, un quàrto, un quínto*, etc. "Half" is *la metà*; the adjective "half" is *mèzzo*.

40. "A couple" or "a pair" is *un páio*. "A dozen" is *una dozzína*. The expressions *una decína, una ventína, una trentína*, etc., *un centináio, un migliáio*, mean "about ten," "about twenty," etc. (see 23, d). "Once," "twice," etc., are *una vólta, due vólte*, etc.

Ex.: *Un páio di scarpe*, a pair of shoes.

Una cinquantína di persóne, some fifty persons.

L'ho visto paréccie vólte, I've seen it several times.

EXERCISE 7.

Con l'orològio si véde¹ che óre sóno.² Un giòrno è³ ventiquátr' óre. Cèrte óre del giòrno è² lúme, cèrte óre è² búio. Un giòrno è³ ventiquátr' óre, ma súlla móstra dell' orològio, délle óre ce n' è⁴ segnáte dódici, perchè le óre del giòrno si cóntano⁵ dall' úna álle dódici, cosí: tócco, due, tre, quáttro, cinque, sèi, sètte, ótto, nôve, dièci, úndici e dódici. Arriváti a dódici non si séguita⁶ a díre trédici, quattórdici, e vía fino a ventiquáttro; ma si ricomíncia⁷ da cápo dal tócco e si arríva⁸ fino a dódici. Il cónto tórna⁹ lo stésso: infátti le óre del giòrno son¹¹ ventiquáttro; e dódici e dódici, sommáti insième, fórmáno¹⁰ ventiquáttro. Dó dicit óre sóno¹¹ la metà del giòrno. L' orològio ha¹² dódici óre; e le ha¹³ segnáte giro giro álla móstra. L' óra è³ sessánta minúti; e l' orològio ségna¹⁴ ánche i minúti. Quélle righettíne tórno tórno álla móstra, fra un' óra e un' áltra, sóno¹¹ i sessánta minúti che fórmáno¹⁰ l' óra. La lancétta gránde ségna¹⁴ i minúti. La lancétta piccína ségna¹⁴ le óre. La lancétta gránde ógni óra fa¹⁵ il giro di tútti e sessánta i minúti; gíra¹⁶ tútta la móstra. La lancétta piccína ógni óra ségna¹⁴ un número, e a girár tútta la móstra ci mette¹⁷ dódici óre, perchè dódici son¹¹ le óre segnáte súlla mó-

stra. Óra sóno² le dódici; tútte e dúe le lancétte sóno¹¹ sülle dódici. Fra un' óra la lancétta gránde avrá¹⁸ giráta tútta la móstra, e sará¹⁹ daccápo sul número 12, e la lancétta piccína sará¹⁹ sull' úno.

¹ *Si véde* = we see. ² It is. ³ Is. ⁴ *Ce n' è* = there are. ⁵ *Si còntano* = are counted. ⁶ *Non si séguita* = we don't go on. ⁷ *Si ricomincia* = we begin over again. ⁸ *Si arriva* = we go. ⁹ Amounts to. ¹⁰ Make. ¹¹ Are. ¹² Has. ¹³ *Le ha* = it has them. ¹⁴ Marks. ¹⁵ Makes. ¹⁶ It goes around. ¹⁷ *Ci mette* = it takes. ¹⁸ Will have. ¹⁹ Will be.

EXERCISE 8.

A year is¹ 365 days. Every seven days is¹ a week. The days of the week are-called²: Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, Saturday. Sunday³ is¹ a⁴ holiday; the other days we-work,⁵ and therefore they-are-called² working-days. The year is-divided⁶ into twelve months. The months are-called²: January, February, March, April, May, June, July, August, September, October, November, December.¹⁷ The month is¹ thirty or thirty-one days.¹⁸ When the month begins,⁷ it-is-called⁸ the first of the month; the second day is-called⁸ the second of the month, the third, the third, and so-on⁹ until the thirtieth or thirty-first. January, March, May, July, August, October, and⁴ December have¹⁰ thirty-one days. April, June, September, and⁴ November have¹⁰ thirty days. February is¹ the shortest month, because it-has¹¹ twenty-eight days only.¹² But every four years February has¹¹ twenty-nine days; and that¹⁶ year is-called¹³ leap-year. The year begins⁷ from January; January is,¹ then,¹⁴ the first month of the year. The year ends¹⁵ with December; so¹⁴ December is¹ the last month of the year.

¹ È. ² *Si chiámamo*. ³ Use def. article. ⁴ Omit. ⁵ *Si lavóra*. ⁶ *Si divide*. ⁷ *Comincia*. ⁸ *Si dice*. ⁹ *Così*. ¹⁰ *Hánno*. ¹¹ *Ha*. ¹² *Sóli*. ¹³ *Si chiáma*. ¹⁴ *Dúnque*. ¹⁵ *Fínisce*. ¹⁶ *Quell*. ¹⁷ Use no article with the names of months. ¹⁸ See **38**, *Úno*, and **38**, *a*.

DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

41. For the indefinite pronouns, see 86-91.

42. (1) The demonstrative pronouns used adjectively are *questo*, "this," and *quello* or *cotesto*, "that." *Cotesto* (spelled also *codesto*) is used of objects near the person addressed. *Questo* and *cotesto* are inflected like other adjectives; but they generally drop *o* before a vowel. *Quello* is inflected like *bello* (see 29, c).

Ex.: *Quest' uomo*, this man; *queste ragazze*, these girls.
Quel bambino, that infant; *quei fanciulli*, those children.
Quell' amico, that friend; *quegli spòsi*, that couple.
Quello zio, that uncle; *quelle signòre*, those ladies.

Questo and *quello* are also used substantively for "this," "that," "this one," "that one": as *fàte questo, non fàte quello*, "do this, don't do that."

(2) "This man" is translated by *questi*, "that man" by *quegli*, *quei*, or *cotesti* (rare); these words are invariable, refer only to persons, and are used only in the nominative singular. *Costui* and *colui* mean respectively the same as *questi* and *quegli*, but are not defective, having a feminine singular *costei*, *colèi*, and a plural (both genders alike) *costoro*, *coloro*. *Costui* is often used in a depreciative sense.

Ex.: *Questi è francése e quegli è tedesco*, this man is French and that one is German.
Chi è costui, who is this fellow?
Parlo di colui, I speak of that man.

(3) *Ciò*, "this," "that," is invariable, and represents a whole idea, not a single word: as *ciò è véro*, "that's so."

a. *Quello* and *questo*, *quégli* and *quésti* mean also "the former," "the latter."

b. "He who" is *colui che*, or simply *chi*. "The one who, whom, which," "that which," "what" is *quello che* or *quel che*.

Ex.: *Chi lavóra* or *colui che lavóra*, he who works.

Quel che dico io, the one I mean.

A quel che sènto, from what I hear.

43. The interrogative "who," "whom," is *chi*. "What?" used substantively is *che*, *che còsa*, or *còsa*.* "What?" used adjectively is *che* or *quále*. "Which?" is *quále*. *Quále* has a plural *quáli*; *chi* and *che* are invariable. "How much?" is *quánto* (-a), "how many?" is *quánti* (-e).

Ex.: *Chi vèdo*, whom do I see?

Di chi parláte, of whom do you speak?

Che còsa dice, what does he say?

Che or *quáli libri avète compráto*, what books did you buy?

Quále di quèsti volúmi è il primo, which of these volumes is the first?

a. The interrogative "whose" is *di chi*.

Ex.: *Di chi è quèsto bigliétto*, whose card is this?

b. In exclamations "what a," "what," are rendered by *che* or *quále* without any article.

Ex.: *Che bel páise*, what a beautiful country!

44. The principal relative pronouns are *che*, *cui*, *il quále*: they are all applied to both persons and things, and mean "who," "whom," "which," or "that." *Il quále* is inflected

* *Còsa* (as *còsa dice*?) is generally avoided in written Italian. Note that *chi* is used in *indirect*, as well as in direct questions.

(*la quále, i quáli, le quáli*). *Che* and *cúi* are invariable. in general *che* is used only as subject and direct object. *cúi* only after prepositions or as indirect object. In poetry *ónde* is often used to signify *of which* or *from which*.

- Ex. : *La lingua che si párla*, the language which we speak.
L' uòmo del quále si tráttá, the man of whom we are speaking.
Le persòne a cùi or *dalle quáli párló*, the persons to whom I speak.
Lo scritto di cùi párló, the work I am speaking of.

(1) As subject or direct object *che* is preferred to *il quále*, unless clearness requires the latter.

(2) The relative "whose" is *il cùi* or *del quále*.

- Ex. : *Úna signóra, il cùi nóme è Lucia*, a lady whose name is Lucy.
Un uòmo, le cùi figlie cónosco, a man whose daughters I know.
L' autóre, del cùi libro si párla, the author whose book we are speaking of.
Le chiése delle quáli si védono le cúpole, the churches whose domes we see.

(3) The relative cannot be omitted in Italian.

- Ex. : *Le càse che ho compráte*, the houses I have bought.

a. "Such . . . as" is *tále . . . quále*; in poetry *tále, quále* have a plural *tái, quái* instead of *táli, quáli*. "As much as" is *tánto quánto*; "as many as" is *tánti quánti*.

- Ex. : *Quále è il pádre tále è il figlio*, as is the father, so is the son

b. "He who" is *chi* or *colui che* (see 42, b).

- Ex. : *Chi ha la sanità è ricco*, he who has health is rich.

c. "Whoever" is *chiúunque*; "whatever" as a substantive is *tutto quel che* or *checcchè*, as an adjective *quále che, qualúunque che, qualúunque, per quánto*. These words, excepting *tutto quel che*, all take the subjunctive. *Checchè* is now but little used.

- Ex. :** *Chiunque sidte*, whoever you may be.
Checchè facciate, fátelo bène, whatever you do, do it well.
Tutto quel che voléte, whatever you wish.
Quali che siano i vòstri motivi, whatever your motives may be.
Qualúnque siano i suóì talénti, whatever his talents may be.
In qualúnque státo che io mi tróvi, in whatever condition I
 may find myself.
Per quante ricchétze égli abbia, whatever riches he may have.

45. The possessive pronouns are :—

My :	m., <i>il mio</i> ,	f., <i>la mia</i> ,	m. pl., <i>i miei</i> ,	f. pl., <i>le mie</i> .
Thy :	<i>il tuo</i> ,	<i>la tua</i> ,	<i>i tuoi</i> ,	<i>le tue</i> .
His, her, its :	<i>il suo</i> ,	<i>la sua</i> ,	<i>i suoi</i> ,	<i>le sue</i> .
Our :	<i>il nostro</i> ,	<i>la nostra</i> ,	<i>i nostri</i> ,	<i>le nostre</i> .
Your :	<i>il vostro</i> ,	<i>la vostra</i> ,	<i>i vostri</i> ,	<i>le vostre</i> .
Their :	<i>il loro</i> ,	<i>la loro</i> ,	<i>i loro</i> ,	<i>le loro</i> .

Lóro is invariable ; the others agree with the object possessed : as *il mio náso*, “ my nose ” ; *la sua bócca*, “ his, her mouth ” ; *i vòstri ócchi*, “ your eyes ” ; *le loro lábbra*, “ their lips.”

When the possessive stands alone in the predicate, the article is omitted if the possessive is used adjectively.

Ex. : *Questo cappéllo è mio*, this hat is mine.

Questo cappéllo è il mio, this hat is mine (*i.e.*, the one that belongs to me).

- a. The article (unless it might be used in English) is omitted before the possessive : (1) When a numeral, an adjective of quantity, or a demonstrative or interrogative adjective precedes it : as *dúe cani suóì*, “ two dogs of his ” (but *i due cani suóì*, “ the two dogs of his ” or “ his two dogs ”) ; *mólti miéi amíci*, “ many friends of mine ” (but *i mólti miéi amíci*, “ the many friends of mine ” or “ my many friends ”) ; *questo tuo difétto*, “ this fault of thine.” (2) When the possessive forms part of a title : as *Vòstra Maestà*,

"Your Majesty"; *Sua Altezza*, "His Highness." (3) When the possessive modifies a noun used in the vocative (in this case the possessive generally follows its noun): as *amico mio*, "my friend!"

(4) The article is generally omitted also when the possessive precedes a noun in the singular expressing relationship: as *nostra madre*, "our mother." But if the noun has a diminutive ending, or an adjective precedes the noun, the article is not omitted: as *il tuo fratellino*, "thy little brother"; *la vostra gentilissima sorella*, "your kind sister." (5) The article is omitted also in certain phrases, such as: *da parte mia*, "for me"; *per amor mio*, "for my sake"; *in casa nostra*, "in our house"; *a modo suo*, "in his own way"; *è colpa vostra*, "it's your fault."

b. The possessive, when not necessary for clearness, is usually replaced by a definite article.

Ex.: *Còme sta la mamma*, how is your mother?

Ha perduto il giudizio, he has lost his senses.

Battono i pièdi, they stamp their feet.

c. When the name of the thing possessed is direct object of a verb, the Italians often use instead of the possessive a conjunctive personal pronoun (see 47) and a definite article. If the thing possessed be a part of the body or clothing, this construction is frequent, even when the name of the thing is not object of a verb.

Ex.: *Si strappa i capelli*, he tears his hair (lit., he tears to himself the hairs).

Mi taglio il dito, I cut my finger (I cut to myself the finger).

Il cane gli agguantò la gamba, the dog seized his leg (seized to him the leg).

Mi duole il capo, my head aches (to me aches the head).

d. When the possessor is not the subject of the sentence, "his," "her" are, for the sake of clearness, often rendered *di lui*, *di lei*: as *egli non conosce il di lei cuore*, "he does not know her heart."

e. "A . . . of mine, of thine," etc., is *un mio*, *un tuo*, etc.: as *una nostra cugina*, "a cousin of ours."

EXERCISE 9.

Quando cádde¹ l' impêro, Siêna soffrì² méno délle áltre città toscáne dále invasióni déi bárbari; ma vénne³ sótto la signoria déi Longobárdi, e pòi fu⁴ úna délle città libere di Carlomágnno, néi cónti e baróni del quále, arricchíti dále têre e daí castèlli che diêde⁵ lóro⁶ l' imperatóre, i nóbili senési crédono⁷ trováre l' origine délla lóro nobiltà. Quésti ládri forestiêri, i cúi nídi néi dintórni di Firênze i cittadíni di quésto comúne cercávano⁸ di distrúggere, abbandonárono⁹ voluntariaménte i lóro castèlli nel território senése, ed entrárono¹⁰ nélla città, che da éssi e daí véscovi veníva⁴ abbellíta di grándi palázzi e governáta con úna máno di fêrro, finchè¹¹ i comúni non¹¹ si levárono¹² e non¹¹ févero¹³ prevalére il lóro dirritto a partecipáre nélla còsa púbblica.

¹ Fell. ² Suffered. ³ It came. ⁴ Was. ⁵ Gave. ⁶ To them. ⁷ Think, believe. ⁸ Were trying. ⁹ Abandoned. ¹⁰ Entered. ¹¹ *Finchè non = until* ¹² *Si levárono = arose.* ¹³ Made.

EXERCISE 10.

Charles V made¹ of Siena a fief for his son Philip II, who ceded-it² to Cosimo I, and the latter built-there³ the fort which the Spaniards had-tried-to⁴ construct. The city remained⁵ under the rule of the good dukes of Lorraine, until Napoleon made-it⁶ capital of the department of the Ombrone. After the fall of the emperer, it-returned⁷ under the dominion of the dukes. In⁸ 1860 it-was⁹ the first Tuscan city that voted¹⁰ the union of Italy under Victor Emmanuel II, the only honest king of whom history speaks.¹¹

¹ *Féce.* ² *La cedette.* ³ *Vi fabbricò.* ⁴ *Avévano volúto.* ⁵ *Restò.* ⁶ *La féce.* ⁷ *Ritornò.* ⁸ See **38**, *b.* ⁹ *Fu.* ¹⁰ *Votásse.* ¹¹ *Partì, which should precede its subject.*

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

46. Personal pronouns are divided into two classes, conjunctive and disjunctive: the conjunctive forms are those used as direct object of a verb, and as indirect object without a preposition; the disjunctive forms are those used as subject of a verb, and as object of a preposition.

Ex.: *ÉGLI* ve lo *dà* *per* ME.
 He to you it gives for me.

CONJUNCTIVE FORMS.

47. Conjunctive pronouns are always unaccented, and cannot be separated from the verb, which they sometimes follow but oftener precede, as will be explained in **48**.

They are used only as direct object of a verb or as indirect object without a preposition. The forms are:—

<i>Mi</i> , me, to me.	<i>Ti</i> , thee, to thee.
<i>Ci</i> , us, to us.*	<i>Vi</i> , you, to you.
<i>Si</i> (reflexive), himself, to himself; herself, to herself; itself, to itself.	
<i>Si</i> (reflexive), themselves, to themselves.	
<i>Lo</i> , him;* <i>gli</i> , to him.†	<i>La</i> , her; <i>le</i> , to her.
<i>Li</i> , them (masc.); <i>loro</i> , to them.†	<i>Le</i> , them (fem.); <i>loro</i> , to them.

“It” must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. “It” representing not a word, but a whole clause, is *lo*.‡

Ex.: *Mi conósce*, he knows me; *ti do i libri*, I give thee the books.
Ci vedéte, you see us; *vi dico tutto*, I tell you everything.
Si veste, he dresses himself; *si divèrtono*, they amuse themselves.

* In old Italian and in poetry *ne* is often used for *ci*, and *il* for *lo*.

† In conversation *li* is often used for *gli*, and *gli* or *li* for *loro*.

‡ In certain idiomatic phrases *la* represents an indefinite object: as *pagàr la càra*, “to pay dearly for it.”

Ècco l'òro: ve lo do, here's the gold: I give it to you.

Ècco la pàlla: la vèdo, here's the ball: I see it.

Còme potèva sapère se io venèva o no? — *Lo ha indovinato.* —
 "How could he tell whether I was coming or not?" "He
 guessed it."

(1) It will be seen that the third person (not reflexive) has different forms for the direct and the indirect object.

Ex.: *Lo trovái*, I found him; *gli fèci un regaló*, I made him a present; *la láschia*, he leaves her; *le scríve*, he writes to her. *Li cercáte*, you seek them (masc.); *le salutáte*, you greet them (fem.); *mandiámo loro mille salúti*, we send them (masc. or fem.) a thousand greetings.

(2) The reflexive pronouns of the first and second persons are *mi*, *ci*; *tí*, *vi*. All plural reflexive pronouns are used also as reciprocal pronouns. A verb is called *reflexive* when it has as *direct* or *indirect* object a *conjunctive* pronoun representing the same person as its subject.

Ex.: *Mi defèndo*, I defend myself; *vi laváte*, you wash yourselves. *Si fa onóre*, she does herself credit; *si ódiano*, they hate each other; *ci amiámo*, we love one another.

(3) Another conjunctive pronoun is *ne*,* "of it," "of them"; it corresponds also to "any," "some" when these words mean "any, some of it," "any, some of them." It is often used pleonastically in Italian.

Ex.: *Ne párla*, he speaks of it; *ne ho*, I have some. *Non ne abbíamo*, we haven't any; *ne voléte*, do you want any? *Tu ne approfítti di quèsta libertá*, you make good use of this liberty.

a. *Vi*, "you," and *ci* and *ne*, "us," are not distinguished by form nor position from the adverbs *vi*, *ci*, meaning "there," "here," "to it," "to them,"† and the adverb *ne*, "thence" (see **84**):* as *ci vado*, "I go there"; *vi è státo*, "he has been there."

* Cf. French *en*.

† Cf. French *y*.

48. The conjunctive pronouns, except *loro*, immediately precede the verb: as *mi vedéte*, “you see me”; *non lo capisco*, “I don’t understand him.”

But when the verb is an infinitive,* a positive imperative,† a present participle, or a past participle used without an auxiliary, the pronoun follows the verb, and is written as one word with it: as *per vederlo*, “to see him”; *di avérlo vedúto*, “to have seen him”; *vedételi*, “see them”; *vedéndoci*, “seeing us”; *avéndoci vedúto*, “having seen us”; *vedútoti*, “having seen thee.” The addition of the pronoun does not change the place of the accent.

Loro always follows the verb, but is never united to it: as *égli dà loro del vîno*, “he gives them some wine”; *parláte loro*, “speak to them.” ‡

a. When an infinitive depends immediately (without an intervening preposition) on another verb, a conjunctive pronoun belonging to the infinitive may go with either verb: as *póssio vedérti* or *ti póssio vedére*, “I can see thee.” If both verbs have objects, the main verb regularly takes all conjunctive pronouns: as *ve lo sênto díre*, “I hear you say it.” See **55**, first paragraph, end.

If, however, the main verb is impersonal, it cannot take the object of the infinitive: as *bisógna fárlo*, “it is necessary to do it.” If the main verb is *fáre*, *lasciáre*, *sentíre*, *udíre*, or *vedére*, it must take the pronoun: as *lo fa chiamáre*, “he has him called.” A reflexive pronoun oftenest goes with the main verb.

If the main verb is *fáre*, and the dependent infinitive has a direct object, the object of *fáre*, if it has one, must be indirect:

* Not the infinitive used — with a negative — as imperative (see **72**): as *non lo fáre*, “do not do it” (second pers. sing.).

† Not the negative imperative, nor the subjunctive used imperatively (see **77, a**): as *non li guardáte*, “do not look at them”; *si régoli*, “let him moderate himself” (third pers. sing. pres. subj.).

‡ Students should follow strictly all of these rules; but they will find that the first is, in certain cases, not always observed by good Italian writers. In literature a pronoun often follows a verb that begins a sentence.

as *le fa avère la lèttèra*, "he lets her have the letter"; *fàtèli vedère a quel signóre*, "let that gentleman see them"; *dovrèi fàrglielo accettàre*, "I ought to make him accept it." This construction is generally used also with *lasciàre*, "to let," and often with *sentìre* and *udìre*, "to hear," and *vedère*, "to see." Note that the main verb takes all conjunctive pronouns.

b. When a conjunctive pronoun is joined to an infinitive, that infinitive drops its final *e*; if it ends in *-rre*, it drops *-re*: as *fàrlo* (*fàre*), "to do it"; *condúrvi* (*condúrre*), "to conduct you."

c. The final vowel of *mi*, *ti*, *si* is often, and that of *lo*, *la* is nearly always elided before a verb beginning with a vowel: as *t'ámo*, "I love thee"; *l'ho visto*, "I've seen him."

d. All conjunctive pronouns except *gli* and *glie* (see 50) double their initial consonant when added to any form of a verb that ends in an accented vowel: as *dámmi* (imper. *da'* from *dàre*), "give me"; *dillo* (imper. *dì* from *dìre*), "say it"; *parleròlle* (antique, for *le parlerò*), "I shall speak to her."

e. Pronouns are joined to the interjection *ècco*, "see here," just as they are joined to the imperative of a verb: as *èccomi*, "here I am"; *èccotelo prònto*, "here it is ready for thee."

49. When two conjunctive pronouns come together, the indirect object precedes the direct: as *mi vi presènta*, "he introduces you to me"; *non vuol presentàrvimi*, "he will not introduce me to you"; *gli si presentò un uòmo*, "a man presented himself to him." See, however, 55, end.

Lóro, however, always comes last: as *presentàtela lóro*, "introduce her to them."

Ne follows all forms except *lóro*: as *me ne dà*, "he gives me some"; *dàtene lóro*, "give them some."

50. *Mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, *si* change their *i* to *e* before *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, *ne* (pronoun or adverb); and if the two words follow the verb, they are joined together: as *me lo díce*, "he tells me

it"; *ve ne domándo*, "I ask you for some"; *mandátecelo*, "send it to us."* *Gli* and *le* ("to her") become *glie* before *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, *ne*, and unite with them: as *gliéli mándo*, "I send them to him, to her"; *vòglio dárglielo*, "I wish to give it to him, to her."

DISJUNCTIVE FORMS.

51. These forms are so called because they do not necessarily stand next to the verb.

Disjunctive pronouns have two cases, nominative and objective. The objective case is used only after prepositions (for exceptions, see **51, a, b**).

The disjunctive forms are these:—

<i>Io</i> , I; <i>me</i> , me.	<i>Tu</i> , thou; <i>te</i> , thee.
<i>Noi</i> , we; <i>noi</i> , us.	<i>Voi</i> , you; <i>voi</i> , you.
{ <i>Égli</i> , <i>lui</i> , <i>éssò</i> , he; <i>lui</i> , <i>éssò</i> , him.	
{ <i>Élla</i> , <i>lei</i> , <i>éssa</i> , she; <i>lei</i> , <i>éssa</i> , her.	
{ <i>Éssi</i> , <i>lorò</i> (<i>églino</i>), they (masc.); <i>lorò</i> , <i>éssi</i> , them (masc.).	
{ <i>Ésse</i> , <i>lorò</i> (<i>élleno</i>), they (fem.); <i>lorò</i> , <i>ésse</i> , them (fem.).	

"It" must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. "It" as subject of an impersonal verb is regularly not expressed (see, however, **51, h**).

Ex.: *La càsa è grandíssima, e intórno ad éssa c' è un giardino*, the house is very large, and around it there is a garden.

Non è véro, it isn't true; *pióve*, it rains.

(1) The various pronouns of the third person are used as follows. In speaking of things the different forms of *éssò* are generally employed. In speaking of persons *égli*

* In poetry *me lo*, *me ne*, etc., often become *mel*, *men*, etc.: as *tel dico*, "I tell thee so"; *sen tórna*, "he returns thence." *Non lo* often = *no*.

(or *ésso*), *élla* (or *éssa*), pl. *éssi*, *ésse* are used for the nominative in written Italian, but in the spoken language they are replaced by *lúí*, *léi*, *lóro*; for the objective *lúí*, *léi*, *lóro* are used both in conversation and in writing. *Églino* and *élleno* are antique forms. For "he who," etc., see **42**, *b*.

Ex.: *Queste cose sono vére anch' ésse*, these things are true, too.
Élla parla con lóro, she speaks with them.
Léi è giovane ma lúí è vécchio, she is young, but he is old.
Vénnero da noi anch' éssi, they came to us, too.

(2) As the Italian verb denotes by its endings the person and number of its subject, the personal pronouns of the nominative case are generally omitted. When expressed (for clearness, emphasis, or euphony), they may precede or follow the verb; in dependent clauses they nearly always follow. The subject of an interrogative verb usually comes after it, as in English.

Ex.: *Parliámno di lúí*, we speak of him; *non vádo*, I don't go.
S' io fóssi ricco cóme è égli, if I were rich as he is.

(3) The disjunctive reflexive pronoun is *sè*, which is masculine and feminine, singular and plural.

Ex.: *Lo févero da sè*, they did it by themselves.

a. Use the objective case: (1) When a pronoun of the third person is not subject of an expressed verb: as *beáto lúí*, "happy he!" *tánto i genitóri che lúí sónno ricchi*, "his parents as well as he are rich." (2) When the pronoun stands in the predicate after the verb *éssere*: as *credèndo ch' io fóssi te*, "thinking I was you." But "it is I," etc., are *sónno io*, *séi tu*, *è lúí*, *è léi*, *siámno noi*, *siéte voi*, *sónno lóro*. (3) In the cases mentioned in **51**, *b*.

b. (1) Clearness or emphasis occasionally requires the disjunctive pronoun instead of the conjunctive ; in this case the conjunctive form is often inserted also.

Ex. : *Parlo a voi signòre*, I speak to *you*, sir.
Mi pìdce ònche a me, it pleases me too.

(2) The disjunctive form must *always* be used when the verb has two direct or two indirect objects.

Ex. : *Vèdo lui e lei*, I see him and her.
Lo do a mio pàdre e a te, I give it to my father and to thee.

c. In speaking of a company, a class, or a people *nói àltri*, *vói àltri* (which are also written as one word) are used for *nói*, *vói*.

Ex. : *Nói àltri italiàni*, we Italians.
Vói àltri pittóri, you painters.

d. "With me," "with thee," "with himself, herself, themselves" are either *con me*, etc., or *méco*, *téco*, *séco*.

e. "Myself," "thyself," etc., used for emphasis with a pronoun or noun, are rendered by the adjective *stéssò*.

Ex. : *Nói stéssi la vedémmo*, we saw her ourselves.

f. "One another," "each other" is *l' un l' àltro*.

Ex. : *Ci amiamo l' un l' àltro*, we love one another.

g. In Florence *èlla* is often shortened into *la* (plural *le*), which is used of both persons and things. In poetry *égli* becomes *èi*.

Ex. : *La non viène*, she doesn't come.
Pàre che la si pòssa tenèr in mào, it looks as if it might be held in the hand.

h. In impersonal phrases like "it is" the subject, "it," is occasionally expressed in Italian ; it is then translated *égli*, which in the spoken language is shortened into *gli*.

Ex. : *Gli è che*, it is because.

52. (1) The usual form of address in Italy is *Élla** (or *élla*), objective *Lèi* (or *lèi*); in conversation *Élla* is replaced by *Lèi* (or *lèi*). This word really means "it," and takes the verb in the third person; but an adjective or past participle modifying it agrees in gender with the person it represents. The plural of *Élla* is *Lóro* (or *lóro*), which takes the verb in the third person plural.

Ex.: *Lèi* or *Élla* è *tedesco*, *signóre*, you are German, sir.

Signorína Nèri, *Lèi* (or *Élla*) *fu lasciáta sóla*, Miss Neri, you were left alone.

Sóno lièto che La stía bène (see **51**, *g*), I'm glad you are well.

E Lóro, *dóve vánno*, and you, where are you going?

Lóro érano già partíti, you were already gone.

Signoríne, *lóro sóno móltto studióse*, young ladies, you are very studious.

Like other personal pronouns, *Élla* and *Lóro* are very often omitted in the nominative.

Lèi è *tróppo gentile* or è *tróppo gentile*, you are too kind.

Cóme stánno, how do you (pl.) do?

The conjunctive forms of *Élla* are *La*, *Le* (or *la*, *le*), those of *Lóro* are *Li*, *Le*, *Lóro* (or *li*, *le*, *lóro*); they occupy the same positions and undergo the same modifications as the corresponding pronouns of the third person (see **48**, **49**, **50**). The reflexive pronoun of *Élla* and *Lóro* is *si*.

Ex.: *Le prométto di visitárla*, I promise (you) to visit you.

Glièlo do, I give it to you.

La prègo d' accomodársi, I beg you to seat yourself.

Vidi Lèi e il bábbó, I saw you and your father (see **51**, *b*, *2*).

Dico lóro, I tell you (pl.).

* Standing for *Vòstra Signoría*, "your lordship" or "ladyship," or some other title of the feminine gender.

Le cercáva, I was looking for you (fem. pl.).

Si divèrtono, signorini, are you enjoying yourselves, young gentlemen?

The possessive of *Élla* is *Súo* (or *súo*). See 45.

Ex.: *La Súa gradíta lèttera*, your welcome letter.

(2) *Vói* is the form of address oftenest found in books ; it is used sometimes in conversation also, but only toward inferiors or toward equals with whom one is on familiar terms.* It is employed for both plural and singular (like English "you"), although its verb is always plural ; an adjective or participle modifying it agrees in gender and number with the person or persons it represents.

Ex.: *Vói qui, Piètro*, You here, Peter?

Vói siète alti tútti e due, you are tall, both of you.

(3) In speaking to an intimate friend, a near relative, a child, or an animal the only form of address is *tu*. *Tu* is used also, like English "thou," in poetry and poetic prose. The plural of *tu* is *vói*.

Ex.: *Ti chidmo Enrico*, I call you Henry.

Dóve sèi tu, where art thou?

Vòglio vedèrvi, figliuòli mièi, my children, I wish to see you.

EXERCISE II.

Tant' è¹! dicéva² tra sè un giòrno Niccolíno ; vòglio³ vedére se quégli uccellíni son⁴ náti. Li guárdo⁵ solaménte e riscéndo⁶ súbito. — E Niccolíno s' arrámpica⁷ su per quell' álbero, tentándo⁸ d' arriváre al nído per levársi quélla curiosità. Ma sul piú bèllo,⁹ sènte¹⁰ la vóce del bábbò il quále èra¹¹ lì prèssò nélla viòttola ;

* Though advocated by some of the best writers and speakers of Italian, the use of *vói* instead of *Léi* and *Lóro* has not become general. In Southern Italy, however, *vói* is the form popularly used.

vuòle¹² scènder lêsto per non fàrsi cògliere in fállo, ma nëlla fúria si smarrisce,¹³ gli mánca¹⁴ il sostégno, precipita¹⁵ a têrra, e cadèndo¹⁶ si fa mále a¹⁷ un piède. Il dolóre lo fa¹⁸ strillàre ; àlle grída còrrono¹⁹ il bábbò e la màmma che lo raccòlgonò²⁰ esclamándo²¹ : — Te l' abbíamo²² détto le cènto vòlte che a' nìdi non ti dovèvi²³ voltàr nemméno : ècco quel che succède²⁴ ai curiòsi e a' disub-bidiènti. — E sòrte per lúi che lo sentírono,²⁵ perchè cosí potérono²⁶ prònti bagnàrgli il piède coll' áqua frèdda, e dòpo avérglielo tenúto in quell' áqua parécchio tèmpo, potérono²⁶ fasciàrglielo strétto ; in quèsto mòdo e dòpo quálche giòrno di ripòso asso-lúto, Niccolíno potè²⁷ ricominciàre a fàre quálche pássò per cása.

¹ I don't care. ² Said. ³ I want. ⁴ Are. ⁵ I will look at. ⁶ Will come down again. ⁷ Climbs. ⁸ Trying. ⁹ *Sul più bello* = at the critical moment. ¹⁰ He hears. ¹¹ Was. ¹² He tries. ¹³ He gets confused. ¹⁴ Fails. ¹⁵ He tumbles. ¹⁶ Falling. ¹⁷ *Fa mále a* = he injures. ¹⁸ Makes. ¹⁹ Run. ²⁰ Pick up. ²¹ Exclaiming. ²² We have. ²³ *Non dovèvi* = you mustn't. ²⁴ Happens. ²⁵ They heard. ²⁶ They could. ²⁷ Was able.

EXERCISE 12.

[In this exercise CARLINO and GORO use *vói*; ARMANDO uses *vói* before GORO enters, *Lèi* afterwards.]

Carlino. Sir, we are¹ alone.

Armándo. So it seems² (*looking*³ *around*).

Carlino. I repeat⁴ to you that we are¹ alone (*louder*).

Armándo. But I tell⁵ you that I admit-it.⁶

Carlino. It is⁷ time to-raise⁸ the mask —

Armándo. (Oh-my⁹! this-fellow¹⁰ has¹¹ recognized me.)

Carlino. And to¹⁵ speak plainly.

Armándo. That is⁷ what I wanted¹² to¹⁵ do, but they inter-
rupted¹³ me all-the-time.¹⁴

Carlino. Do¹⁵ you see¹⁶ that grove over-there?

Armándo. I see¹⁷ it.

Carlino. There nobody will-interrupt¹⁸ you.

Armándo. Must¹⁹ I go there to speak (*surprised*)?

Carlino. We shall-go²⁰ together.

*Enter*¹⁵ GORO with two guns.

Carlino. (*Taking*²¹ *one of-them*) Take²² the other.

Armándo. Thanks, I am²³ not²⁴ a²⁵ hunter.

Góro. Take²² it, or-else²⁶ — (*brandishing*²⁷ *a thick club*).

Armándo. Willingly — to²⁸ satisfy you — excuse-me,²⁹ is⁷ it loaded?

Carlino. To-be-brief,³⁰ you hate³¹ me; you must³² hate me. I hate³³ you. So⁴⁷ over-there in that grove — at eighty paces from-each-other³⁴ — bang!³⁵ Either you kill³⁶ me or I kill³⁷ you.

Armándo. But I have³⁸ n't²⁴ these sinister intentions, which-are¹⁵ contrary to my principles.

Carlino. In that⁵⁰ case you will-permit³⁹ this-man-to-amuse-himself-by-shaking⁴⁰ the dust from your⁴¹ black coat with that club.

Armándo. No, indeed; what-are-you-thinking-of⁴²? It would-be⁴³ too much-trouble⁴⁴! (*Góro brandishes*⁴⁵ *the club*) Be-easy⁴⁶ with the club.

Carlino. No? Then⁴⁷ *Carolina* must⁴⁸ be mine.

Armándo. You're-welcome-to-her.⁴⁹

Carlino. In that⁵⁰ case we are friends; but be-off⁵¹ from⁵² here, do-you-understand⁵³?

Armándo. (What a⁵⁴ nice way they have⁵⁵ in this country!)

¹ *Sidmo.* ² *Páre.* ³ *Guardándo.* ⁴ *Ripêto.* ⁵ *Dico.* ⁶ *Ne convengo.* ⁷ *È.*
⁸ To (*dì*) raise to one's self. . . . ⁹ *Ahi.* ¹⁰ See **42**, 2. ¹¹ *Ha.* ¹² *Volévo.*
¹³ *Hánno interrótto.* ¹⁴ Always. ¹⁵ Omit. ¹⁶ *Vedète.* ¹⁷ *Vèdo.* ¹⁸ *Interromperà.* ¹⁹ *Dèvo.* ²⁰ *Andrèmo.* ²¹ *Prendèndo.* ²² *Prendète.* ²³ *Sóno.*
²⁴ *Non*, "not," must precede the verb. ²⁵ See **16**, a. ²⁶ *Altriménti.*
²⁷ *Agitándo.* ²⁸ *Per.* ²⁹ *Scúsi.* ³⁰ *Àlle còrte.* ³¹ *Odidète.* ³² *Dovète.*
³³ *Ódio.* ³⁴ The one from the other. ³⁵ *Brun.* ³⁶ *Annazzète.* ³⁷ *Amazzò.* ³⁸ *Ho.* ³⁹ *Permetterète.* ⁴⁰ That this man amuses (*dìvèrta*) himself to shake. ⁴¹ See **45**, c. ⁴² Seems-it (*páre*) to you? ⁴³ *Sarèbbe.*
⁴⁴ *Incòmodo.* ⁴⁵ *Ágita.* ⁴⁶ *Stia buòno.* ⁴⁷ *Dunque.* ⁴⁸ *Dève.* ⁴⁹ Take (*pigli*, subj.) her then (*páre*) for-yourself. ⁵⁰ *Tal.* ⁵¹ *Via.* ⁵² *Di.*
⁵³ *Inanc'èste.* ⁵⁴ **43**, b. ⁵⁵ *Hánno.*

AUXILIARY VERBS.

53. The irregular verbs *èssere*, “to be,” and *avère*, “to have,” are the ones most used as auxiliaries in Italian. They are conjugated as follows :—

a. **Infinitives:** *èssere*, to be; *èssere stàto*, to have been.

Participles: *essèndo*, being; *essèndo stàto*, having been; *stàto*, been.

Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Sòno,</i>	<i>Èra,</i>	<i>Fùì,</i>	<i>Sarò,</i>
<i>sèi,</i>	<i>èri,</i>	<i>fòsti,</i>	<i>saràì,</i>
<i>è,</i>	<i>èra,</i>	<i>fu,</i>	<i>sarà,</i>
<i>siàmo,</i>	<i>eravàmo.</i>	<i>fummo.</i>	<i>sarèmo,</i>
<i>siète,</i>	<i>eravàte.</i>	<i>fòste,</i>	<i>sarète,</i>
<i>sòno.</i>	<i>èrano.</i>	<i>fùrono.</i>	<i>sarànno.</i>

PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PRETERITE PERFECT.	FUTURE PERFECT.
<i>Sòno stàto (stàta),</i>	<i>Èra stàto (stàta),</i>	<i>Fùì stàto (stàta),</i>	<i>Sarò stàto (stàta),</i>
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.
<i>siàmo stàti (stàte),</i>	<i>eravàmo stàti (stàte),</i>	<i>fummo stàti (stàte),</i>	<i>sarèmo stàti (stàte),</i>
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

Imperative.

Subjunctive.

Conditional.

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
<i>Sii or sia,</i>	<i>Sia,</i>	<i>Fòssi,</i>	<i>Sarèi,</i>
	<i>sia,</i>	<i>fòssi,</i>	<i>sarèsti,</i>
	<i>sia,</i>	<i>fòsse,</i>	<i>sarèbbe.</i>
<i>siàmo,</i>	<i>siàmo,</i>	<i>fòssimo,</i>	<i>sarèmmo,</i>
<i>siàte.</i>	<i>siàte,</i>	<i>fòste,</i>	<i>sarèste,</i>
	<i>siano or sieno.</i>	<i>fòssero.</i>	<i>sarèbbero.</i>

	PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PERFECT.
	<i>Sia stàto (stàta),</i>	<i>Fòssi stàto (stàta),</i>	<i>Sarèi stàto (stàta),</i>
	etc.	etc.	etc.

b. **Infinitives:** *avére*, to have; *avére avúto*, to have had.

Participles: *avéndo*, having; *avéndo avúto*, having had; *avúto*, had

Indicative.

PRESENT.	<i>Hò,</i>	IMPERFECT.	<i>Avéva,</i>	PRETERITE.	<i>Èbbi,</i>	FUTURE.	<i>Avrà,</i>
	<i>hai,</i>		<i>avévi,</i>		<i>avésti,</i>		<i>avrà,</i>
	<i>ha,</i>		<i>avéva,</i>		<i>ebbe,</i>		<i>avrà,</i>
	<i>abbidmo,</i>		<i>avevamo,</i>		<i>avémmo.</i>		<i>avrèmo,</i>
	<i>avéte,</i>		<i>avevate,</i>		<i>avéste,</i>		<i>avréte,</i>
	<i>hánno.</i>		<i>avévano.</i>		<i>ebbero.</i>		<i>avránno.</i>
PERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.		PRETERITE PERFECT.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
<i>Ho avúto,</i>		<i>Avéva avúto,</i>		<i>Èbbi avúto,</i>		<i>Avrà avúto,</i>	
etc.		etc.		etc.		etc.	

Imperative.

Subjunctive.

Conditional.

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Ábbia,</i>	<i>Avéssi,</i>	<i>Avrà,</i>
<i>Ábbi,</i>	<i>ábbi or ábbia,</i>	<i>avéssi,</i>	<i>avrésti,</i>
	<i>ábbia,</i>	<i>avésse,</i>	<i>avrèbbe,</i>
<i>abbidmo,</i>	<i>abbidmo,</i>	<i>avéssimo,</i>	<i>avrémmo,</i>
<i>abbiate.</i>	<i>abbiate.</i>	<i>avéste,</i>	<i>avréste,</i>
	<i>abbiano.</i>	<i>avéssero.</i>	<i>avrèbbero.</i>
	PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PERFECT.
	<i>Ábbia avúto,</i>	<i>Avéssi avúto,</i>	<i>Avrà avúto,</i>
	etc.	etc.	etc.

54. (1) The auxiliary of the passive is *èssere*, "to be."

Ex.: *Sóno amáto*, I am loved.

(2) The future ("shall," "will") and the conditional ("should," "would") are formed in Italian without any auxiliary.

Ex.: *Ío andrò ed egli verrà*, I shall go, and he will come.

Vorrèi vederlo, I should like to see him.

(3) The auxiliary of the perfect, pluperfect, preterite perfect, and future perfect tenses is *avére*, "to have," if the verb be active and transitive. If the verb be passive, reflexive, or reciprocal, the auxiliary is always *essere*. If the verb be intransitive, the auxiliary is generally *essere*, but sometimes *avére*.* See 47, (2), on p. 37.

Ex. : *Ho parlato*, I have spoken.

Avévano fatto quèste cose, they had done these things.

Mi sono fatto male, I have hurt myself.

Le donne si erano sbagliate, the women had made a mistake.

Sarò venuto, I shall have come ; *è nevicato*, it has snowed.

a. A past participle used with the auxiliary *essere* must agree with its subject in gender and number. But when the verb has a reflexive pronoun as *indirect* object, and some other word as *direct* object, the past participle may agree with the subject, or with the direct object, or remain invariable.

Ex. : *La ragazza è tornata*, the girl has returned.

Le donne si sono disputate, the women have disputed.

La sorella si è fatta male, our sister has hurt herself.

Ci siamo fatti onore, we have done ourselves credit.

Ci siamo data (or dato) parola d' onore, we have pledged our word of honor.

b. A past participle used with *avére* may or may not agree with its direct object, according to the choice of the writer. It usually does not agree when the object follows ; and it nearly always does agree when the object is a personal pronoun preceding the verb.

Ex. : *La birra che aveva bevuto (or bevuta)*, the beer he had drunk.

Ho veduto molte cose, I have seen many things.

Li ho trovati, I have found them.

c. "To be," expressing a state or condition, is often rendered by *stare* (92, 4), instead of *essere*. *Stare per* or *essere per* (followed by the infinitive) means "to be on the point of."

* The use of *avére* with intransitive verbs must be learned by practice.

Ex.: *Sto bène*, I'm well; *cóme sta*, how are you?
Stáva per uscire, I was just going out.

d. English "am" (or "was") + the present participle, when expressing duration, is rendered either by the simple present (or imperfect) or by the same tense of *stàre** + the present participle; when denoting futurity, it is translated by the future (or conditional), sometimes by the present (or imperfect).

Ex.: *Cammináva*, he was walking; *státe lavorándo*, you are working.
Leggévano or *stávano leggèndo*, they were reading.
Mèdiito or *sto meditándo*, I am meditating.
Dice che verrà (or *viène*), he says he is coming.
Dtsse che verrèbbe, he said he was coming.

e. A verb with the auxiliary "used to" (or "would" = "used to") is translated either by the simple imperfect, or by the infinitive with *solére*, "to be accustomed" (92, 14).

Ex.: *Vi andáva* (or *soléva andàre*) *ógni sèra*, he used to go there every evening.

f. *Venire*, "to come" (92, 166), and *rimanère*, "to remain" (92, 16), are sometimes used as auxiliaries in the simple tenses of the passive, instead of *èssere*. *Andàre*, "to go" (92, 1), is similarly used, but always implying duty or obligation.

Ex.: *I ládri vénnero arrestáti*, the thieves were arrested.
Rimáse sorpréssa, she was surprised.
Il fucile non va toccáto, the gun mustn't be touched.

g. The English auxiliary "do" is not expressed in Italian.

Ex.: *Non viène*, he does not come.

h. "To have a thing done" is *far fare úna còsa* (92, 2).

Ex.: *Il re lo féce ammazzàre*, the king had him killed.

* *Andàre* (92, 1) and *venire* (92, 166) are sometimes used instead of *stàre*.

55. The third person of the passive is very often replaced by the reflexive construction with *si*: as *si raccontò*, "it is related"; *questo libro si legge*, "this book is read"; *la spada che mi si diède*, "the sword that was given me"; *quelle cose si facevano*, "those things were done." Many writers always make the verb agree with its subject in number; but in popular speech the verb is nearly always in the singular when its subject follows (as if *si* were the subject of the verb, and the original subject were the object): as *si vedono* (or *véde*) *moltissime cose*, "many things are seen"; *non si può* (or *pòssono*) *leggere questi libri*, "these books can't be read." *Si* belonging to a dependent infinitive always goes with the main verb; see **48, a**.

The construction with *si* is generally used also to render the English indefinite "they" followed by a verb: as *si dice*, "they say." In this sense it is employed with neuter as well as with transitive verbs: as *si va spesso*, "people often go." See also **63, a**. In this construction an object pronoun may precede *si*: as *lo si fa*, "it is done."

56. Following are synopses of the compound tenses of transitive, neuter, reflexive, and passive verbs. In the paradigms given henceforth these forms will be omitted.

a. Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *trovare*, "to find," and *venire*, "to come":—

Avère trováto, to have found.

Avèndo trováto, having found.

Ho trováto, I have found.

Avéva trováto, I had found.

Ébbi trováto, I had found.

Avrò trováto, I shall have found.

Avrèi trováto, I should have found.

Ábbia trováto, I have found.

Avéssi trováto, I had found.

Éssere venúto, to have come.

Essèndo venúto, having come.

Sóno venúto, I have come.

Éra venúto, I had come.

Fùí venúto, I had come.

Sarò venúto, I shall have come.

Sarèi venúto, I should have come.

Sia venúto, I have come.

Fòssi venúto, I had come.

b. Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *alzarsi* ("to raise one's self"), "to get up," and *andarsene*,* "to go away."

Infinitive PERFECT :	<i>Êssersi alzato,</i>	<i>Êssersene andato,</i>
Participle PERFECT :	<i>Essendosi alzato,</i>	<i>Essendosiene andato,</i>
Indicative PERFECT :	<i>Mi sono alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sono andato,</i>
PLUPERFECT :	<i>Mi era alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne era andato,</i>
PRETERITE PERFECT :	<i>Mi fui alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne fui andato,</i>
FUTURE PERFECT :	<i>Mi sarò alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sarò andato,</i>
Conditional PERFECT :	<i>Mi sarèi alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sarèi andato,</i>
Subjunctive PERFECT :	<i>Mi sia alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sia andato,</i>
PLUPERFECT :	<i>Mi fossi alzato.</i>	<i>Me ne fossi andato.</i>

c. Following is a synopsis of the entire passive of *amare*, "to love" : —

Infinitive PRESENT :	<i>Êssere amato,</i> to be loved.
PERFECT :	<i>Êssere stato amato,</i> to have been loved.
Participle PRESENT :	<i>Essendo amato,</i> being loved.
PERFECT :	<i>Essendo stato amato,</i> having been loved.
Indicative PRESENT :	<i>Sono amato,</i> I am loved.
PERFECT :	<i>Sì, io stato amato,</i> I have been loved.
IMPERFECT :	<i>Êra amato,</i> I was loved.
PLUPERFECT :	<i>Êra stato amato,</i> I had been loved.
PRETERITE :	<i>Fui amato,</i> I was loved.
PRETERITE PERFECT :	<i>Fui stato amato,</i> I had been loved.
FUTURE :	<i>Sarò amato,</i> I shall be loved.
FUTURE PERFECT :	<i>Sarò stato amato,</i> I shall have been loved.
Conditional :	<i>Sarèi amato,</i> I should be loved.
PERFECT :	<i>Sarèi stato amato,</i> I should have been loved.
Imperative :	<i>Sii amato,</i> be loved.
Subjunctive PRESENT :	<i>Sia amato,</i> I am loved.
PERFECT :	<i>Sia stato amato,</i> I have been loved.
IMPERFECT :	<i>Fossi amato,</i> I were loved.
PLUPERFECT :	<i>Fossi stato amato,</i> I had been loved.

* *Andarsene* is composed of the verb *andare*, "to go," the reflexive *si*, and the adverb *ne*, "thence" (see 47, a).

57. "May," "might," "can," "could" are generally rendered by the proper tense of *potére*; * "must," "ought," "shall" = "must," "should" = "ought," by *dovére*; * "will" and "would" expressing volition, by *volére*.*

Ex. : *Può èssere véro*, it may be true.
Non potéva parláre, he couldn't speak.
Dève pagárló, he must pay him, he shall pay him.
Dovrèbbe fárló, he ought to do it, he should do it.
Vòglío sapére, I will know.
Non vorrèi andáre, I wouldn't go.

No preposition intervenes between these verbs and the dependent infinitive.

Ex. : *Hánno potúto dormíre*, they have been able to sleep.
Potrèmo partíre, we shall be able to start.
Dovèmmo veníre, we had to come.
Dovrète trovárla, you will have to find her.
Vorrà tornáre, he will want to return.
Vorrèi sapére, I should like to know.

These verbs are not defective, like the English modal auxiliaries; hence in Italian the tense is expressed by the auxiliary itself, and not by the dependent infinitive. To find the proper form of *potére*, *dovére*, or *volére*, replace "may," etc., by the correct tense of "to be able"; "must," etc., by "to be obliged"; "will," etc., by "to want" or "to like": as "I could have said it" = "I should have (*avrèi*) been able (*potúto*) to say it (*dírlo*)" = *avrèi potúto dírló*.

Ex. : *Avrèbbe dovúto tacére*, he ought to have kept still.
Avrèmmo volúto restáre, we would have stayed.

* See 92, 21, 8, 19. The auxiliary of these verbs is regularly *avére*; but some writers use with them the auxiliary that belongs to the dependent infinitive: as *hánno potúto veníre* or *sóno potúti veníre*, "they have been able to come."

a. "Must" is also expressed by the impersonal verb *bisognàre*, "to be necessary," followed by the infinitive or by *che*, "that," with the subjunctive. "To have to" is *avère da*.

Ex.: *Bisogna fàrlo*, it must be done.

Bisogna che andiàmo, we must go.

Ho da scrìvere una lèttera, I have to write a letter.

b. "To be able" meaning "to know how" is *sapère* (see 92, 6). "Not to be able to help" doing a thing is *non potèr a méno di non* (with infinitive) or *non potèr fàre a méno di* (with infinitive).

Ex.: *Non sèppe fàrlo*, he couldn't do it.

Sa lèggere e scrìvere, he can read and write.

Non potè a méno di non rìdere, he couldn't help laughing.

EXERCISE 13.

Giorgétto è un bambíno vispo, vispo. È sollécito; àlle sètte è già leváto, ed è già andáto nel giardíno. È mággio, e il giardíno è tútto fioríto; ròse, gígli, viðe mándano¹ un odóre soáve. Giorgétto si strúgge² di cògliere i fióri; ma la mámma non vuòle³: la mámma lo ha lasciáto andár nel giardíno, a pátto che non cogliésse⁴ i fióri. A un trátto Giorgétto véde⁵ úna ròsa piú bèlla di tútte le áltre, non resísse⁶ piú al desidèrio di pigliàrlo. La mámma non lo saprà,⁷ non lo può⁸ sapère, — díce⁹ fra sè Giorgétto; e stènde¹⁰ la máno al cespúglio, ed è per còglierla. Ma che è státo? Ritíra¹¹ lèsto la máno, e grída,¹² e piánge.¹³ La ròsa ha le spíne: il súo gámbo nascósto tra bellíssime fòglie è tútto pièno di spíne; e le spíne gli háanno bucáto tútta la máno. La máno è sanguinósa; e Giorgétto piánge,¹³ e la mámma óra si avvedrà¹⁴ che il súo bambíno è disobbediènte.

¹ Send forth. ² Is dying. ³ Is willing. ⁴ He should pick. ⁵ Sees. ⁶ Resists. ⁷ Will know. ⁸ Can. ⁹ Says. ¹⁰ Stretches out. ¹¹ He draws back. ¹² Screams. ¹³ Cries. ¹⁴ Will see.

EXERCISE 14.

Silvio Pellico was¹ confined in prison ; and there, in the silence of his² dungeon, he found³ a friend, a companion — a spider. Yes, a spider made⁴ his web in a corner of the prison, and Silvio did⁵ not-destroy-it⁶ ; on-the-contrary,⁷ he used-to-throw⁸ him crumbs⁹ of bread, and little by little he became-so-attached¹⁰ to that spider, and the spider to him, that the creature used-to-come-down¹¹ from his web and go¹² to find Pellico,¹³ and would-go¹² on his¹⁴ hand and take¹⁵ food⁹ from his¹⁴ fingers. One day the jailer removed¹⁶ the unhappy Pellico. The prisoner thought-of¹⁷ his spider, and said¹⁸ : “ Now that I am-going-away,¹⁹ he will-come-back²⁰ perhaps, and will-find²¹ the prison empty ; or if there-is²² somebody else here,²³ he may²⁴ be an enemy of spiders,⁹ and tear down that beautiful web and crush the poor beast.”

¹ Preterite. ² See **45, b.** ³ *Trovò.* ⁴ *Féce.* ⁵ See **54, g.** ⁶ Not to-him it destroyed (*disfécce*). ⁷ *Ánzi.* ⁸ *Buttáva* : see **54, e.** ⁹ Def. art. ¹⁰ *Tánto si affezionò.* ¹¹ *Si movéva* : see **54, e.** ¹² *Andáva.* ¹³ See **13, e.** ¹⁴ See **45, c.** ¹⁵ *Prendéva.* ¹⁶ *Mutò di stánza.* ¹⁷ *Pensò a.* ¹⁸ *Disse.* ¹⁹ See **54, d** : *me ne vado.* ²⁰ *Ritornerà.* ²¹ *Troverà.* ²² *Vi sarà.* ²³ Omit. ²⁴ *Potrèbbe* : see **57.**

REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS.

58. Italian verbs are divided into four conjugations, according as the infinitive ending is *-äre*, accented *-ère*, unaccented *-ere* (or *-rre*), or *-ire*. Regular verbs of the second and third conjugations are, however, inflected just alike.

a. The final *e* of the infinitive may be dropped before any word except one beginning with *s* impure.*

* Cf. **10, b**; **14, b.** Italians find it hard to pronounce three consecutive consonants of which the middle one is *s*.

THE REGULAR VERB.

59. *Parlâre*, "to speak," will serve as a model for the first conjugation. All compound tenses are omitted (see 56):—

Infinitive and Participles.

Parlâre, *parlândo*, *parlâto*.

Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Parlo</i> ,	<i>Parlâva</i> ,	<i>Parlâi</i> ,	<i>Parlerò</i> ,
<i>parli</i> ,	<i>parlâvi</i> ,	<i>parlâsti</i> ,	<i>parlerâi</i> ,
<i>parla</i> ,	<i>parlâva</i> ,	<i>parlò</i> ,	<i>parlerà</i> ,
<i>parliâmo</i> ,	<i>parlavâmo</i> ,	<i>parlâmmo</i> ,	<i>parlerêmo</i> ,
<i>parlâte</i> ,	<i>parlavâte</i> ,	<i>parlâte</i> ,	<i>parlerête</i> ,
<i>parlano</i> .	<i>parlavano</i> .	<i>parlârôno</i> .	<i>parlerânno</i> .

Imperative.

Subjunctive.

Conditional

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Parli</i> ,	<i>Parlâssi</i> ,	<i>Parlerêi</i> ,
<i>Parla</i> ,	<i>parli</i> ,	<i>parlâssi</i> ,	<i>parlerêsti</i> ,
	<i>parli</i> ,	<i>parlâsse</i> ,	<i>parlerêbbe</i> ,
<i>parliâmo</i> ,	<i>parliâmo</i> ,	<i>parlâssimo</i> ,	<i>parlerêmmo</i> ,
<i>parlâte</i> .	<i>parlâte</i> ,	<i>parlâte</i> ,	<i>parlerêste</i> ,
	<i>parlino</i> .	<i>parlâssero</i> .	<i>parlerêbbero</i> .

a. Verbs whose infinitives end in *-care* or *-gare* insert *h* after the *c* or *g* in all forms where those letters precede *e* or *i*: as *pâghi* (*pagâre*), "let him pay"; *cercherò* (*cercâre*), "I shall search." Verbs in *-ciare* and *-giare* drop the *i* before *e* or *i*: as *mangi* (*mangiâre*), "thou eatest"; *comincerà** (*cominciâre*), "he will

* Some writers retain the *i* before *e*: as *comincerâ*.

begin." But all other verbs in *-iare* drop the *i* only before another *i*: as *picchi* (*picchiàre*), "let him strike"; *pigli* (*piagliàre*), "thou takest"; but *picchierà*, *piplierèi*.

b. The verbs *giocàre*, *rotàre*, *sonàre* generally change *o* of the stem into *uo* in all forms where that vowel is accented: as *suòni*, "let him play"; *giuòcano*, "they play." *Rinnovàre* and *tonàre* may make the same change. The *u* is sometimes used throughout.

60. Verbs of the second and third conjugations * are inflected like *credere*, "to believe":—

Infinitive and Participles.

Crédere, *credèndo*, *credùto*.

Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
Crédo,	Crédéva,	Crédèi (credètti),	Créderò,
crédi,	credévi,	credèsti,	créderài,
créde,	credéva,	credè (credètte),	créderà,
credidmo,	credevàmo,	credémmo,	créderémo,
credéte,	credevàte,	credèste,	créderéte,
crédono.	credévano.	credérono (credèttero).	créderànno.

Imperative.

Subjunctive.

Conditional

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	Créda,	Crédèssi,	Créderèi,
Crédi,	créda,	credèssi,	créderèsti,
	créda,	credèsse,	créderèbbe,
credidmo,	credidmo,	credèssimo,	créderémmo,
credéte.	credidte,	credèste,	créderèste,
	crédano.	credèssero.	créderèbbero.

* Most grammars and dictionaries class these two together as the "second conjugation."

Battere, compêtere, convêrgere, divêrgere, lûcere, mescere, miêtere, pâscere, prûdere, ripêtere, strîdere, têssere, tøndere, and their compounds do not have in the preterite the forms in parentheses.

Verbs in *-cere* and *-gere* insert after the *c* or *g* an *i* before the *u* of the past participle, but not before the *o* or *a* of the singular or third person plural of the present indicative or subjunctive: as *mescere*; *mesco, mesci, mescce, mesciâmo, mescete, mescono*; *mescâ, etc., mescano; mesciûto*.

61. Most verbs of the fourth conjugation* are inflected like *finire*, "to finish": —

Infinitive and Participles.

X *Finire*, *finendo*, *finito*.

Indicative.

X PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Finisco,</i>	<i>Finiva,</i>	<i>Finii,</i>	<i>Finirò,</i>
<i>finisci,</i>	<i>finivi,</i>	<i>finisti,</i>	<i>finirà,</i>
<i>finisce,</i>	<i>finiva,</i>	<i>finì,</i>	<i>finirà,</i>
<i>finiâmo,</i>	<i>finivâmo,</i>	<i>finimmo,</i>	<i>finirêmo,</i>
<i>finite,</i>	<i>finivâte,</i>	<i>finiste,</i>	<i>finirête,</i>
<i>finiscono.</i>	<i>finivano.</i>	<i>finirono.</i>	<i>finiranno.</i>

Imperative.

Subjunctive.

Conditional.

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Finisca,</i>	<i>Finissi,</i>	<i>Finirei,</i>
<i>Finisci,</i>	<i>finisca,</i>	<i>finissi,</i>	<i>finiresti,</i>
	<i>finisca,</i>	<i>finisse,</i>	<i>finirebbe,</i>
<i>finiâmo,</i>	<i>finiâmo,</i>	<i>finissimo,</i>	<i>finiremmo,</i>
<i>finite.</i>	<i>finâte,</i>	<i>finiste,</i>	<i>finireste.</i>
	<i>finiscano.</i>	<i>finissero.</i>	<i>finirebbero.</i>

Though inflected like *finire* in all other parts, *dormire*, *fuggire*, † *pentire*, *sentire*, *servire*, *vestire* are always, *abor-*

* Most grammars and dictionaries call this the "third conjugation."

† *Fuggire* inserts no extra *i* (see last sentence of 60).

*rire, bollire, and verbs in -vertire are generally, and assorbire, inghiottire, mentire, nutrire, tossire are often, in the present indicative, imperative, and subjunctive, conjugated after the model below. Partire and sortire are, when transitive, inflected like finire, when intransitive, like sentire.**

Indicative.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.
<i>Sênto,</i>		<i>Sênta,</i>
<i>sênti,</i>	<i>Sênti,</i>	<i>sênta,</i>
<i>sênte,</i>		<i>sênta,</i>
<i>sentidmo,</i>	<i>sentidmo,</i>	<i>sentidmo,</i>
<i>sentite,</i>	<i>sentite.</i>	<i>sentidte,</i>
<i>sêntono.</i>		<i>sêntano.</i>

62. The present participle of all verbs is invariable.

Ex.: *Stavâmo parlândo*, we were speaking.

63. In all conjugations a form of the first person singular of the imperfect indicative ending in *o* instead of *a* is nearly always used in conversation, and occurs often in the works of modern authors: as *leggévo*, "I was reading."

a. In popular speech the first person plural of all tenses is generally replaced by the third person singular preceded by *si*: *nói âltri si crêde*, "we believe"; *nói si êra venùti*, "we had come"; *ci si decise*, "we decided (ourselves)."

b. Final *o* of the third person plural is frequently omitted: as *parlan di lui*, "they speak of him." Forms in *-ânno* sometimes drop *-no*: as *dirân tutto*, "they will tell everything."

c. The imperfect indicative endings *-avâmo, -avâte, -evâmo, -evâte, -ivâmo, -ivâte* are often pronounced *-âvamo, -âvate*, etc.

d. Occasionally, especially in poetry, *-at-* is omitted from the ending of the past participle of the first conjugation: *destâto = désto*.

* Compounds are conjugated like their simple verbs.

THE IRREGULAR VERB.

64. Certain parts of Italian irregular verbs are always regular: the example given below will show which they are. *Èssere* (see 53, a) is an exception to all rules.

65. Many irregular verbs that belong or once belonged to the third conjugation have the infinitive contracted (*fàre* for *fàcere*, *dìre* for *dìcere*, *condúrre* for *condúcere*): in this case the future and conditional are formed from this contracted infinitive (*farò*, *dirèi*, *condurrèbbe*), while the present participle, the imperfect indicative and subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and preterite are formed from the uncontracted stem (*facèndo*, *dìcéva*, *conduciàmo*).

66. *Pórre* (for *pónere*), "to put," a verb of the third conjugation, will serve to show which are the regular and which the irregular parts of irregular verbs: the forms printed in italics are regular in all verbs except *dàre*, *dìre*, *èssere*, *fàre*, *stàre*; those in Roman type may be irregular.

Infinitive and Participles.

Pórre, *ponèndo*, *pósto*.

Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Póngo</i> ,	<i>Ponéva</i> ,	<i>Pósi</i> ,	<i>Porrò</i> ,
<i>póni</i> ,	<i>ponévi</i> ,	<i>ponésti</i> ,†	<i>porrái</i> ,
<i>póne</i> ,	<i>ponéva</i> ,	<i>póse</i> ,	<i>porrà</i> ,
<i>poniàmo</i> ,	<i>ponévamo</i> ,	<i>ponémmo</i> ,†	<i>porrémo</i> ,
<i>ponéte</i> ,*	<i>ponévate</i> ,	<i>ponéste</i> ,†	<i>porréte</i> ,
<i>póngono</i> .	<i>ponévano</i> .	<i>pósero</i> .	<i>porráno</i> .

* See 66, 4.

† See 66, 3.

Imperative	Subjunctive.		Conditional.
	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	Póngá,	<i>Ponéssi</i> ,*	Porrêi,
Póni,	póngá,	<i>ponéssi</i> ,	porrésti,
	póngá,	<i>ponése</i> ,	porrêbbe,
poniámo,	poniámo,	<i>ponéssimo</i> ,	porrémmo,
ponéte.	poniáte,	<i>ponéste</i> ,	porréste,
	póngano.	<i>ponéssero</i> .	porrêbbero.

It will be seen that the present participle, the imperfect indicative and subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and preterite indicative are always regular.

(1) *Dáre* and *stáre* have in the future and conditional *darò*, *darêi*; *starò*, *starêi*. Otherwise the only irregularity in the future and conditional is that they are contracted in many verbs even when the infinitive is uncontracted: as *vedére*, "to see," *vedrò*; *veníre*, "to come," *verrêi*.

(2) From the first person singular of the preterite the other irregular persons can be constructed, the third person singular by changing the ending *i* to *e*, the third person plural by adding *-ro* to the third person singular. †

(3) The *regular* persons of the preterite and the whole imperfect subjunctive are slightly irregular in *dáre* and *stáre*, which substitute *e* for *a* in those forms (*désti*, *démmo*, *déste*, *déssi*; *stésti*, *stémmo*, *stéste*, *stéssi*).

(4) *Díre* (for *dícere*) and *fáre* (for *fácere*) have *díte* and *fáte* in the second person plural of the present indicative.

a. Verbs whose stem ends in *l*, *n*, or *r* often drop final *e* or *i* in the singular of the present indicative and imperative: as *non vuol andáre*, "he will not go"; *viên qui*, "come here." See also **63**, *a*, *b*, *c*.

* See **66**, 3.

† This rule applies only to *irregular* preterites.

b. The three forms of the imperative are exactly like the corresponding persons of the present indicative, except in *avère*, *sapère*, and *volère*, where they follow the subjunctive (*abbì, abbiámò, abbiáte*; *sáppi, sappiámò, sappiáte*; *vògli, vogliámò, vogliáte*), and in *andàre*, *dàre*, *dìre*, *fàre*, and *stàre*, which have in the singular *va'*, *da'*, *dì'*, *fa'*, *stà'*.

c. The third person plural of the present indicative can always be constructed from the first person singular, from which can be formed also the whole present subjunctive except the first and second persons plural: these come from the first person plural of the present indicative. Exceptions to this rule are *andàre*, *avère*, *dàre*, *fàre*, *sapère*, and *stàre*, which have in the third person plural of the present indicative *vánno, hánno, dànno, fánno, sánno, stánno*; while *avère*, *dàre*, *sapère*, and *stàre* have in the present subjunctive *abbia, dia, sappia, stia*.

67. With the aid of the above notes any verb except *èssere* can be constructed from the infinitive, the participles (the present participle often being necessary to show the uncontracted form of the infinitive), the present indicative, and the first person singular of the preterite and future. A list of irregular verbs begins on page 88.

a. In general, compound verbs not differing in conjugation from their simple verbs will be omitted from this list. All compounds of *dàre* and *fàre* are accented on the same syllable as the simple verbs: as *fa*, "he does"; *disfà*, "he undoes."

The compounds of *stàre* demand special mention: *ristàre, soprastàre, sottostàre, sovrastàre* are inflected like *stàre* (*ristà, soprastètti, sottostàno*); *distàre* has no present participle, is regular in the present of all moods (*dìsto*, etc.), but otherwise is inflected like *stàre* (*dìstètti*, etc.); *constàre, contrastàre, instàre, ostàre, prestàre, restàre, sostàre* are regular throughout (*cònta, contrástano, instái, ostàrono, presterò, rèsti, sostássì*).

68. In old Italian and in poetry both regular and irregular verbs differ in many ways from the normal types: some of the commonest variations are given below.

a. In the first and third persons singular and the third person plural of the imperfect indicative *v* is often dropped, but never in the first conjugation: *voléva* = *voléa* (also *volía*); *finivano* = *finiano*. Some of these forms are not uncommon in modern prose.

b. The conditional endings *-èi*, *-èbbe*, *-èbbero* are generally replaced in poetry by *-ia*, *-ía*, *-iano*: *crederèi* = *credería*.

c. The future endings *-ò*, *-ánnno* are sometimes replaced by *-ággio* or *-ábbo*, *-ággiono* or *-ábbono*: *amerò* = *amerággio*; *ameránnno* = *amerábbono*.

d. In the third person plural of the preterite *-no* or *-ono* is often dropped: *amárono* = *amáro* or *amâr* (also *amórno*, *amónno*). In the third person singular we find *amáó*, *credéo*, *sentío*.

e. Final *-ero* is often replaced by *-ono*: *avrèbbero* = *avrèbbono*.

f. In the first person plural final *o* is often dropped, and then the *m* sometimes becomes *n*: *andíamo* = *andíam* or *andían*.

g. In the first person plural of the present indicative *-iámo* may be replaced by *-ámo*, *-émo*, or *-tmo*, according to the conjugation.

h. Final *-iano*, wherever it occurs (also *-éano* in the imperfect), may be replaced by *-ieno* or *-ièno*: *avévano* = *avièno*.

i. At the end of a word we often find *e* for *i*, sometimes *i* for *e*: *pènsi* = *pènze*; *ascoltáte* = *ascoltáti*.

j. *E* is sometimes added to a word ending in an accented vowel: *amò* = *amòe*.

EXERCISE 15.

Tánto all' andáre quánto al tornáre dálla scuôla, Enríco dà¹ nõia a tútti; picchia i bambíni piú piccìni di lúi, tíra i sássi a quálche pòvero cáne che se ne va² tranquillaménte pel sùo viággio, rómpe le piánte del giárdino che dève³ traversáre per andáre a scuôla o per tornáre a cása; insómma è un contínuo far malánni.

Il bábbò va² a lavoráre la mattína prêsto ; la mámma è maláta, e quíndi non lo pôssonò⁴ accompagnáre. L' áltra mattína però gli seguì brútta. Méntre andáva a scuòla, víde⁵ avánti a sè un bambíno piccínò, tútto vestíto bène, e che paréva sólo ; Enrico, sénza far tánti discórsi, arríva di diétro, gli piglia il cappèllo e gliélc bútta in úna fónite che éra lì vicína. Il pôvero bambíno sí métte a piángere, e Enrico cominciò a scappáre. Ma quèsta vòlta avéva fáttò⁶ mále i suòi cónti : il bambíno non éra sólo, lo accompagnáva un bel can barbóne. I can barbóni hánnò tánto intendíménto, che fánnò⁶ áltre còse ben piú meraviglióse che andáre ad accompagnáre a scuòla un bambíno. Il barbóne dúnque, cóme víde⁵ il sùo padroncínò assalíto, vía diétro ad Enrico che fuggíva in un áttimo lo raggiúgnse,⁷ e agguantátagli úna gámbera, lo badáva a môrdere⁸ ; Enrico urláva, ma il cáné non lo lasciò finchè ur signóre, che avéva vísto⁵ tútta la scèna, non lo minacciò col bastóne. Enrico êbbe stracciáti i calzóni, laceráta la cárne délla gámbera, e fu pòi púníto dal maêstro e daí genitóri ; ma da que giòrno a quèsta pártè non dà¹ piú nõia a nessúno, avèndo vedúto che un cáné stéssò gli avéva insegnáto cóme fósse mále molestáre gli áltri.

¹ From *dàre*, 92, 3. ² *Andàre, andàrsene*, 92, 1. ³ *Dovère*, 92, 8. ⁴ *Potère*, 92, 21. ⁵ *Vedère*, 92, 10. ⁶ *Fàre*, 92, 2. ⁷ *Raggiúgnere*, 92, 138

⁸ He kept biting him.

EXERCISE 16.

Have you ever observed what¹ happens when a pot of water boils at the fire? The steam of the water rises like so-much smoke, and remains attached to the lid that covers the pot ; when this steam has begun to cool, it becomes² water once-more,² and falls³ down again³ drop by drop. In-like-manner⁴ it happens with⁵ the vapors which the sun and the heat lift from the earth. The vapors rise, collect themselves on⁶ high in little bubbles, and thus united they form clouds.⁷ When these clouds are very-much charged with⁹ moisture, they resolve themselves into water ; and

the water, falling³ down again³ in drops where the wind carries it, forms rain.⁷ So¹⁰ rain⁷ is-only¹¹ steam turned-back-into¹² water. The cloud, too,¹³ is-only¹¹ a quantity of steam not-very¹⁴ dense and not-very¹⁴ high¹⁵ in the air. This vapor, by¹⁶ remaining low, prevents us sometimes from-seeing¹⁷ objects⁷ even at a¹⁶ small distance from us.

¹ *Quello che.* ² To become once more = *ritornare.* ³ To fall again = *ricascare.* ⁴ *Medesimamente.* ⁵ *Per.* ⁶ *In.* ⁷ See **13**, *b.* ⁸ *Molto.* ⁹ *Di.* ¹⁰ *Dunque.* ¹¹ *Non è altro che.* ¹² *Tornato.* ¹³ *Poi.* ¹⁴ *Poco.* ¹⁵ *Sollevato.* ¹⁶ Omit. ¹⁷ *Di vedere.*

MOODS AND TENSES.

69. The English present participle used as subject, predicate nominative, or direct object of a verb must be rendered in Italian by the infinitive, nearly always preceded by the definite article.

Ex.: *Mi piace il viaggiare*, I like travelling.

Rifarsela cogli animali è da sciocchi, taking vengeance on animals is folly.

La nostra prima cura fu il cercare una pensione, our first care was hunting up a boarding-house.

Odio lo studiare, I hate studying.

70. The English present participle preceded by a preposition is translated as follows: (1) If the preposition is a necessary part of the thought, it is expressed in Italian, and the English present participle is rendered by the infinitive with the definite article. This article is, however, omitted (unless it would be used in English) after the prepositions *di*, "of"; *dopo di*, "after"; *invece di*, "instead of"; *prima di*, "before"; *senza*, "without."

Ex.: *Óltre il fáre scarabócchi scríve mále*, besides making blots he writes badly.

Parlái cóntra il trárre útile di quella disgrázia, I spoke against utilizing that misfortune.

Il vizio di fumáre, the habit of smoking.

Ho l' abitudíne di coricármi tårdi, I am in the habit of going to bed late.

Invéce di díirmi tútto, instead of telling me everything.

Príma di moríre, before dying.

Parliámno sénza rifléttere, we speak without thinking.

(2) If in English the omission of the preposition, although it made the construction awkward, would not essentially change the meaning, the phrase is rendered in Italian by the present participle without any preposition.

Ex.: *Studiándo si impára*, (through) studying we learn.

Doaréi corrispóndere álla súa cortesia ascóltándola, I ought to acknowledge her courtesy (by) listening to her.

Parténdo incontrò un amíco, (on) going away he met a friend.

Copiándo non fa erróri, (in) copying he makes no mistakes.

(3) "To amuse one's self by . . ." and "to weary one's self by . . ." are *divertírsi a . . .* and *affannársi a . . .* with the infinitive: as *si divérte a tívár sássí*, "he amuses himself throwing stones." Some other verbs often take this construction.

71. Following are some other rules for the use of the infinitive and participles.

a. When any verb is used as an auxiliary, the mood and tense are expressed in that verb, and not in the dependent infinitive (see **57**).

Ex.: *Avréi potúto fárló*, I could have done it.

b. After *fáre*, "to make" or "to have" (= "to cause"), *sentíre* and *udíre*, "to hear," and *vedére* "to see," the Italian present

infinitive is used to render an English past participle. After *lasciare*, "to let," and often after the preposition *da* an Italian active infinitive is used to translate a passive one in English.

Ex. : *Si fa capire*, he makes himself understood.

Farò fare un paio di scarpe, I shall have a pair of shoes made.

L'ho sentito dire, I have heard it said.

Lo vide ammazzare, he saw him killed.

Si lascia ingannare, he lets himself be deceived.

Non c'è niente da fare, there is nothing to be done.

c. The Italian past participle is inflected like any other adjective. The present participle is invariable. When in English the present participle is used adjectively, without any verbal force whatsoever, it is translated, not by the participle, but by a verbal adjective, which can be formed from almost any Italian verb by changing the infinitive ending into *-ante* for the first conjugation, and into *-ente* for the others. This adjective may be used substantively. Some writers have used it as a participle.

Ex. : *Questi vasi sono rotti*, these vases are broken.

La donna sta cucendo, the woman is sewing.

Stavano parlando, they were speaking.

Un animale parlante, a speaking animal.

Acqua bollente, boiling water ; *due amanti*, two lovers.

d. A whole protasis is often expressed in Italian by a present participle, or by an infinitive with *a*.

Ex. : *Andandovi lo vedrebbe*, if he went there, he would see it.

A bucarsi esce il sangue, if you prick yourself, blood comes.

e. Writers sometimes use, instead of a clause in indirect discourse, an infinitive followed by the word that would have been subject of the clause.

Ex. : *Disse essere questo l'uomo che cercavamo*, he said this was the man we were looking for.

72. In negative commands the infinitive is always used instead of the second person singular of the imperative.

Ex. : *Trovalo*, find it; *non lo trovare*, do not find it.

73. When an action is represented as having taken place and still continuing, the English uses the perfect or pluperfect tense, the Italian the present or imperfect.

Ex. : *Studio l'italiano da otto mesi*, I have studied Italian for eight months.

74. In subordinate clauses referring to the future and introduced by a conjunction of time, where the present is often used in English, the future tense must be employed in Italian.

Ex. : *Quando vi andrò, glielo dirò*, when I go there, I'll tell him.

a. The future is often used, without any idea of future time, to express probability.

Ex. : *Sarà uscito*, he has probably gone out.

Avrà molto denaro, he probably has a great deal of money.

75. The difference between the imperfect and the preterite is this: the preterite is used of an event that occurred at a definite date in the past, the imperfect is used in a description or in speaking of an accessory circumstance or an habitual action in past time — the preterite is a narrative, the imperfect a descriptive tense. The preterite perfect is used (instead of the pluperfect) only after conjunctions meaning “as soon as” (*appena che, subito che, tosto che*), and sometimes after *dopo che*, “after.”*

* It is used also in phrases like: *in cinque minuti ebbe finita la lettera*. “in five minutes he had the letter finished.”

Ex. : *Entrò mentre dormivamo*, he came in while we slept.
Facevo così ogni mattina, I did so every morning.
Lo fece l'anno scorso, he did it last year.
Tosto che l'ebbe visto, uscì, as soon as he had seen it, he went

a. In conversation the perfect is often used instead of the preterite, when the event is not remote.

Ex. : *Vi sono andato ieri*, I went there yesterday.

76. The conditional, like the English "should" and "would," has two uses : in indirect discourse after a principal verb in a past tense it expresses the tense which in direct discourse would be future ;* in the conclusion of a conditional sentence it is used when the protasis is (or, if expressed, would be) in the imperfect subjunctive (see **77**).

Ex. : *Disse che lo farebbe*, he said he would do it.
Se fosse vero lo crederèi, if it were true, I should believe it.
Questa casa mi converrebbe, this house would suit me.

77. When a condition is contrary to fact, or consists of a more or less unlikely supposition referring to future time, † the protasis is in the imperfect (or pluperfect) subjunctive, the apodosis in the conditional ; ‡ otherwise both protasis and apodosis are in the indicative.

Ex. : *Se l'avessi te lo darèi*, if I had it, I should give it thee.
Se fosse tornato l'avrei veduto, if he had returned, I should have seen him.
Se venisse noi ce ne andremmo, if he came, we should go.
Se vi andassi morrèi, if I should go there, I should die.

* The perfect of the future or the conditional is sometimes used where the simple tense would be expected : *disse che non l'avrebbe fatto più*, "he said he would do it no more."

† Rendered in English by the imperfect, or by the auxiliary "should."

‡ The imperfect indicative is occasionally used to replace the imperfect or pluperfect subjunctive of the protasis and the conditional of the apodosis.

Se non è véro è ben trovato, if it isn't true, it's a good invention.
Se lo féce sarà punito, if he did it, he will be punished.

a. The missing persons of the imperative are supplied from the present subjunctive. The imperfect subjunctive is used to express a wish that is not likely to be realized.

Ex.: *Si accòmodi*, be seated (sing.); *stiano zitti*, be quiet (plur.).
Sia pure, be it so; *vengano subito*, let them come at once.
Fosse pure, would it were so!

b. When a relative clause restricts its antecedent to one of all its possible conditions or actions, the verb of that relative clause is in the subjunctive, — the present subjunctive if the verb on which it depends be present or future, the imperfect if it be past or conditional.

Ex.: *Non c'è animale più bellno d'un gatto giovane che fáccia il chiásso*, there is no animal prettier than a kitten that is at play.
Dóve troveréte un giovine che spòsi voi, where will you find a young man who will marry you?
Vorrèi vedére un bel quadro che non fosse antico, I should like to see a fine picture that is not old.

c. The verb of a subordinate clause depending on an impersonal verb, on a superlative, or on one of the words "first," "last," and "only" is in the subjunctive. This rule does not apply to reflexive verbs, nor to affirmative phrases meaning "it is true" or "it is because."

Ex.: *Bisognò ch'io vi andassi*, I had to go there.
È giusto che siano puniti, it's right they should be punished.
Il più bello ch'io conosca, the finest that I know.
Si véde che non è cosí, you see it isn't so.
È véro che ci sono stato, it's true that I've been there.

d. The subjunctive is used after all conjunctions meaning "although," "as if," "unless," "provided that," "in order that," "in such a way that" (denoting purpose), "before," "until" (referring to future), "whenever," "wherever," "without."

Ex.: *Benchè stia nascòsto, lo troverò, dovunque stia*, although he be hidden, I shall find him, wherever he is.

Partirò a méno che égli non vènga, I shall go unless he comes.

Lo féce perchè io venissi, he did it that I might come.

La divtse in mòdo che le due parti fòssero ugudli, he divided it in such a way that the two parts should be equal.

Aspètta finchè io tòrni, wait until I return.

e. The subjunctive is used after the indefinite words and phrases *quále che, qualúnque, chiúnque, checchè, per quánto*.

Ex.: *Chiúnque vènga*, whoever comes.

Qualúnque disgrázia che succèda, whatever misfortune happens.

Per quante vòlte ci vada, however many times I go there.

Per quánto ricco égli stia, however rich he may be.

f. The verb of an indirect question is nearly always in the subjunctive when it depends on a main verb either in a past tense or in the conditional.

Ex.: *Domándano se il re è mòrto*, they ask whether the king is dead.

Domandò se il pádre fòsse uscito, he asked whether his father was out.

g. In a clause dependent on a verb of saying the subjunctive is used if the main verb is negative, or interrogative, or in the conditional, or in a past tense. It is generally not used, however, after an affirmative verb in a past tense when the author himself wishes to imply that the indirect statement is true.

Ex.: *Dice che la còsa è chiaríssima*, he says the thing is perfectly clear.

Non díco che quèsto stia vèro, I don't say this is true.

Dissero che lo zio fòsse ammaláto, they said their uncle was ill.

Gli díssi che mi chiamáva Enrico, I told him my name was Henry.

h. The subjunctive is used after verbs expressing causation, concession, desire, emotion, prevention, and uncertainty : *i.e.*, after verbs of bringing about ; granting, permitting ; commanding, hoping, requesting, wishing ; fearing, regretting, rejoicing ; forbidding, hindering ; being ignorant, denying, disbelieving, doubting, expecting, pretending, supposing, suspecting, thinking. But *sperare*, "to hope," very often does not take the subjunctive.

Ex. : *Non so chi siano*, I don't know who they are.

Vorrèi che non fòsse accaduto, I wish it had not happened.

Supponiamo che sia provato, let us suppose that it is proved.

Spèro che verrà, I hope he will come.

i. *Se*, "if," is occasionally omitted before an imperfect subjunctive ; in this case the subject, if expressed, must follow the verb.

Ex. : *Sarèi felice ventisse egli*, I should be happy, should he come.

EXERCISE 17.

La màmma di Alfrédo avéva lasciáto un anêllo d' ôro sul cassettóne. Alfrédo vòlle¹ métterselo in dító. Che giudízio ! pretêndere che l' anêllo délla màmma pòssa² stáre in un ditino d' un fanciúlllo ! Se lo mise³ nel dító gròsso e pòi s' affacciò álla finêstra ; l' anêllo cascò di sótto, e non se ne sêppe⁴ piú nùlla. La màmma cêrca l' anêllo, ma non c' êra piú ; cêrca di qui, di là, di sópra, cêrca per tútto, nè l' anêllo si può² trováre. Allóra chiáma Alfrédo e gli díce⁵ : — Bambíno, dímmi⁶ la verità ; hái présò⁷ tu il mío anêllo ? l' hái pèrso⁸ tu ? — Alfrédo, cattívo, disse⁵ di no. La màmma si ricordáva bène d' avérlo lasciáto nel vassoíno sul cassettóne. Non credéva Alfrédo capáce di dir le bugíe, quíndi sospettò che qualcúno l' avésse rubáto. Ci andáva in cása⁹ úna bambína, figliuòla d' un antíco súdo servitóre, e il sospétto cádde¹⁰ sópra quèsta pòvera creatúra. La màmma di Alfrédo non la vòlle¹ piú in cása ; ma l' allontanò con bèlla maniêra, e nessúno si avvídè¹¹ di nùlla, perchè quèlla signóra êra buónna. Però la

bugia di Alfrédo féce¹² sì che súa mádre credésse ládra quélla pôvera bambína. Dío perdóni Alfrédo, Dío gl' ispiri di rimediàre a sì brúttà azióne ; váda,¹³ si bútti ái pièdi délla mámma, le rac-cónti tútto, e non commétta mái piú di quéste azionáce.

- ¹ From *volére*, **92**, 19. ² *Potére*, **92**, 21. ³ *Méttere*, **92**, 73. ⁴ *Sapére*, **92**, 6. ⁵ *Dire*, **92**, 164. ⁶ *Dire*: see **48**, d. ⁷ *Préndere*, **92**, 87. ⁸ *Pérdere*, **92**, 83. ⁹ There used to come to the house. ¹⁰ *Cadére*, **92**, 7. ¹¹ *Avvedérsi*, **92**, 10. ¹² *Fáre*, **92**, 2. ¹³ *André*, **92**, 1.

EXERCISE 18.

We inhabit the earth ; but not all the earth has the same name everywhere : the earth is-divided¹ into five parts, and every part has its name. The five parts of the earth are-called¹ : Europe, Asia, Africa, America, Oceanica. Imagine you-cut-open² the earth in the middle and place³ it on a table, in-such-a-way⁴ that the inside shall-rest⁵ on the table, and the outside shall-present⁵ itself to your eyes. You will have two circles : in the circle that lies⁶ at your right are⁷ Europe, Asia, Africa, and a part of Oceanica ; in the circle that lies⁶ on-the⁸ left are⁷ America and the other part of Oceanica. But the ancients did⁹ not¹⁰ believe that the earth was round, nor did⁹ they know that its parts were five. They thought that the earth was flat and surrounded by the sea ; they knew, moreover,¹¹ only¹² three parts : Europe, Asia, Africa. They never¹³ would have dreamed that the earth was round, and that on¹⁴ the side opposite to the-one¹⁵ which they inhabited there¹⁵ was inhabited land. America was discovered 395 years ago by an Italian who was-called¹ Christopher Columbus. Christopher Columbus was-born¹⁷ in a village near Genoa in 1447. His parents were poor ; his father earned hardly enough-to¹⁴ support the family. However, by-dint¹⁸ of sacrifices they had¹⁹ him study ; and as²⁰ Christopher studied willingly, he grew up a fine²¹ boy. When it was time²² to-choose²³ a profession, he chose to-be-a²⁴ sailor. In⁸ those times they believed that the world ended

after Africa ; but Columbus, on-the-contrary,²⁵ persuaded himself that the world ought²⁶ not¹⁰ to²⁶ end there, and that by continuing to sail, one¹ ought²⁶ to²⁶ turn and come-back to the same point.

¹ See 55. ² *Di aprire.* ³ *Di posare.* ⁴ *In modo.* ⁵ See 77, d. ⁶ Use *restare.* ⁷ *C'è.* ⁸ *A.* ⁹ See 54, g. ¹⁰ *Non*, "not," must precede the verb. ¹¹ *Poi.* ¹² See 82. ¹³ See 83. ¹⁴ *Da.* ¹⁵ *Quella.* ¹⁶ *Vi.* ¹⁷ To be born = *nascere*, 92, 77. ¹⁸ *A forza.* ¹⁹ Use *fare*, 92, 2. ²⁰ *Perchè.* ²¹ *Bravo.* ²² Use def. article. ²³ *Di scegliere.* ²⁴ *Di fare il.* ²⁵ *Invéce.* ²⁶ See 57.

CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND AD- VERBS.

CONJUNCTIONS.

78. The principal conjunctions are : —

After, <i>dopo che.</i>	Granting that, <i>dato che.</i>
Also, <i>anche, pure.</i>	However (= nevertheless), <i>però, pure.</i>
Although, <i>benchè, sebbène, non ostante</i> <i>che.</i>	However (before an adj.), <i>qualunque,</i> <i>per quanto.</i>
And, <i>e.</i>	If, <i>se</i> (occasionally <i>quando, ove</i>).
As, <i>come, quanto</i> (after <i>tanto</i>).	In case, <i>caso.</i>
As (= since), <i>siccome, poichè.</i>	In order that, <i>perchè, acciochè, affinché.</i>
As fast as, <i>via via che.</i>	Much less, <i>non che.</i>
As if, <i>come se, quisi.</i>	Neither . . . nor, <i>nè . . . nè.</i>
As long as, <i>finchè.</i>	Nevertheless, <i>tuttavia, nondimèno, però.</i>
As well as, <i>come anco.</i>	Nor, <i>nè, nemmèno, neppure.</i>
Because, <i>perchè.</i>	Nor . . . either, <i>nemmèno, neppure.</i>
Before, <i>prima che, avanti che.</i>	Nor even, <i>neanche, neppure.</i>
Both . . . and, <i>e . . . e.</i>	Not to say . . . but even, <i>non che . . . ma.</i>
But, <i>ma.</i>	Or, <i>o, ovvéro, ossia.</i>
Either . . . or, <i>o . . . o.</i>	Or else, <i>ossia.</i>
Even if, <i>anche se, ancorchè.</i>	Provided that, <i>purchè.</i>
Except that, <i>se non che.</i>	Rather, <i>anzi.</i>
For, <i>chè.</i>	Since (temporal), <i>dacchè.</i>

Since (causal), <i>poichè, siccome.</i>	Too, <i>pure, anche.</i>
So, <i>dunque, adunque.</i>	Unless, <i>a meno che non, eccetto che non, senza che.</i>
So that (result), <i>di modo che, sicchè.</i>	Until, <i>finchè non.</i>
So that (= in order that), <i>perchè.</i>	When, <i>quando.</i>
Than, <i>che.</i>	Whence, <i>donde.</i>
That, <i>che.</i>	Where, <i>dove, ove, là dove.</i>
That (= in order that), <i>perchè.</i>	Wherever, <i>dovunque.</i>
Then, <i>dunque.</i>	Whether, <i>se.</i>
Therefore, <i>dunque, però, perciò, adunque</i>	While, <i>mentre, mentre che.</i>
(at the beginning of a clause).	

The final vowel of *anche, che, dove, neppure*, and *ove* is generally elided before *e* or *i*.

a. Of the above conjunctions *acciochè, affinché, a meno che non, ancorchè, avanti che, benchè, caso, come se, dato che, dovunque, eccetto che non, non ostante che, perchè* meaning "in order that," *per quanto, prima che, purchè, qualunque, quasi, sebbène*, and *senza che* are followed by the subjunctive. For the use of *che*, "that," with the subjunctive, see **77**, *c, g, h*. *Come* is occasionally used for *come se*, and then it takes the subjunctive. *Finchè* when referring to the future sometimes has the sense of *finchè non*, and then it generally takes the subjunctive. *Se* is followed by the subjunctive when it introduces an indirect question or statement dependent on a verb in a past tense, or a condition contrary to fact. *Quando* and *ove*, meaning "if," frequently take the subjunctive when *se* would not. — For examples, see **77**, *c, d, f, g, h*.

b. *Che* cannot be omitted in Italian as "that" is in English: * as *disse che fosse véro*, "he said it was true." *Se* can be omitted before an imperfect subjunctive: see **77**, *i*.

* It is omitted, however, in the following peculiarly Italian construction: *il ragazzo paréva fosse felice*, "the boy seemed to be happy"; that is, between a verb of seeming and the subjunctive dependent on it, when in English the construction would be a verb of seeming with a dependent infinitive. It is occasionally omitted also after verbs of wishing, hoping, and fearing: as *spéro mi scríva prèsto*, "I hope you will write to me soon."

c. *E* and *o* are often written *ed* and *od* before a vowel.

Ex.: *Mio pàdre ed io*, my father and I.

d. Between a verb of motion and an infinitive "and" is rendered by the preposition *a*.

Ex.: *Andrà a cercàrlo*, I'll go and look for it.

e. When *anche*, "also" or "too," relates to a personal pronoun, the disjunctive form of that pronoun must follow *anche*, even if some form of the same pronoun has already been expressed.

Ex.: *Andrèmo anche noi*, we shall go too.

Parte anch' ègli, he goes away too.

Trovàti anche lui, I found him too.

Vennero anch' essi, they came too.

Lo or me lo diède anche a me, he gave it to me too.

Ti piúce anche a te, you like it too.

PREPOSITIONS.

79. The principal prepositions are:—

About (= approximately), *circa*.

About (= around), *intórno a*, *attórno a*.

Above, *sopra*.

According to, *secondo*.

After, *dopo*, *dopo di*.

Against, *contra*, *contro*.

Along, *lungo*.

Among, *fra*, *tra*.

Around, *intórno a*, *attórno a*.

As far as, *fino a*, *sino a*.

As for, *per*, *quánto a*, *in quánto a*.

As to, *rispétto a*.

At, *a*.

Because of, *per motivo di*.

Before (time), *prima di*, *innanzi*.

Before (place), *davánti a*, *innanzi*.

Behind, *dietro*.

Below, *sotto*.

Beside (place), *accanto a*.

Besides, beside (= in addition to)

oltre.

Between, *fra*, *tra*.

Beyond, *oltre*, *al di là di*.

By, *da*, *accanto a* (= beside).

By means of, *per mezzo di*.

During, *durante*.

Except, *tranne*, *eccetto*, *fuori di*.

For, *per*.

From, *da*, *fin da*.

In, *in*.

In front of, *davánti a*, *innanzi*.

Inside of, <i>déntro di</i> .	Round and round, <i>tórno tórno a</i> .
Instead of, <i>invéce di</i> .	Since, <i>da</i> .
In the midst of, <i>in mézzo a</i> .	To, <i>a</i>
Into, <i>in</i> .	Toward, <i>vérso</i> .
Near, <i>vicino a</i> .	Through, <i>per</i> .
Of, <i>di</i> .	Under, <i>sótto</i> .
On, <i>su</i> (before a vowel, <i>sur</i>), <i>sópra</i> .	Upon, <i>su</i> (before vowels, <i>sur</i>), <i>sópra</i> .
On this side of, <i>al di qua di</i> .	Up to, <i>fino a, sino a</i> .
On to, <i>su</i> (before vowels, <i>sur</i>), <i>sópra</i> .	With, <i>con</i> .
Opposite, <i>dirimpétto a</i> .	Within, <i>fra, tra</i> .
Out of, <i>da, di, fuòri di</i> .	Within (= inside of), <i>déntro di</i> .
Outside of, <i>fuòri di</i> .	Without, <i>sénza</i> .
Over, <i>sópra</i> .	Without (= outside of), <i>fuòri di</i> .

When governing a personal pronoun *contra, diétro, dópo, sénza, sópra, sótto*, and often *fra* and *vérso* take *di* after them: as *sénza di me*, "without me"; *fra di lóro*, "among themselves." After *con, in, per*, a word beginning with *s* impure generally prefixes *i**: as *la stráda*, "the street"; *in istráda*, "in the street."

a. "To" before the name of a country, after a verb of motion, is *in*.

Ex.: *Andiámo in Fráncia*, let us go to France.

b. "To" before an infinitive is rendered in Italian as follows: (1) After the verbs *bastáre*, "suffice"; *bisognáre*, "need"; *convenire*, "suit"; *desideráre*, "desire"; *dovére*, "must," "ought"; *fáre*, "make"; *lasciáre*, "let"; *parére*, "seem"; *potére*, "can," "be able"; *sapére*, "know"; *sentire*, "hear," "feel"; *solére*, "be accustomed"; *udire*, "hear"; *vedere*, "see"; and *volére*, "wish," "to" before a following infinitive is omitted. It is omitted also in exclamations and indirect questions consisting only of an interrogative and an infinitive.

* Cf. 58, *a*.

Ex.: *Dovrèi capire*, I ought to understand.
Bisogna pensarci, it is necessary to look out for it.
Potrèmo venire, we shall be able to come.
Non sa che fare nè dove avvolgersi, he doesn't know what to do nor where to turn.

(2) After verbs of accustoming, attaining, beginning, compelling, continuing, hastening, helping, inviting, learning, preparing, teaching, and after verbs of motion, "to" before a following infinitive is *a*.

Ex.: *Andranno a vederla*, they will go to see her.
Si affrettò a rispondere, he hastened to reply.

(3) After all other verbs it is *di*; but "to" denoting purpose or result is *per*, and "to" indicating duty or necessity is *da*.

Ex.: *Gli dissi di scrivere*, I told him to write.
Mi è grato di dirlo, I am happy to say so.
Legge per divertirsi, he reads to amuse himself.
È troppo basso per arrivarci, he's too short to reach it.
Ho qualchecosa da fare, I have something to do.

c. "By" denoting the agent is *da*.

Ex.: *Fu fatto da lui*, it was done by him.

d. "In" is *in*; but when expressing future time it is *fra*.

Ex.: *Fra tre giorni sarà finito*, in three days it will be finished.

e. "For" is *per*: as *l'ha fatto per me*, "he has done it for me." But in the sense of "since," in speaking of past time, "for" is *da*. "For," meaning "during," is omitted or translated *durante*. Sentences like "it is right for him to do it" must be translated by *che* with the subjunctive: *è giusto che lo faccia*.

Ex.: *Dimora da molti anni a Firenze*, he has lived for many years at Florence (see 73).
Resterò cinque settimane, I shall stay for five weeks.
Piùve durante un mese, it rained for a month.
Bisogna ch'io vada, it is necessary for me to go.

f. “From” is *da*; but before adverbs and sometimes after verbs of departing it is *di*. In speaking of time it is generally *fin da*.

Ex. : *È lontano di qua*, it is far from here.
Èsco di casa, I go out of the house.
Fin dal principio, from the beginning.

g. *Da* has, in addition to the meanings “by,” “from,” “since,” another sense hard to render in English: it may be translated “as,” “characteristic of,” “destined for,” “such as to,” or “suited to,” according to the context. *Da* means also “at the house of” or “to the house of.” *Da* corresponds to English “on” or “at” before the word “side,” *párte*, used in its literal sense.

Ex. : *Prométto da uòmo d' onóre*, I promise as a man of honor.
Il Salvini da Otello, Salvini as Othello.
Sarèste tanto buono da venire, would you be so good as to come?
Questo è da sciocchi, this is acting like a fool.
Il bambino ha un giudizio da grande, the child has the judgment of a grown person.
La sala da pranzo, the dining-room.
Una tazza da caffè, a coffee-cup.
L' ho veduto dal Signór Néri, I saw him at Mr. Neri's.
Viène da me, he comes to my house.
Da questa parte, on this side.

h. *A* is often used before a noun — not indicating material (which is expressed by *di*) nor purpose (expressed by *da*) — that describes another noun, when in English these two substantives would form a compound word.

Ex. : *Una macchina a vapore*, a steam-engine.
Una sedia a dondolo, a rocking-chair.
Uno sgabello a tre piedi, a three-legged stool.

i. *Èssere per* or *stàre per* means “to be about to.”

Ex. : *Stava per parlare*, he was on the point of speaking.

j. In some idiomatic phrases *di* is used in Italian when another preposition would be employed in English.

Ex.: *Di giorno, di notte*, by day, by night.

Èssere contento di una cosa, to be satisfied with a thing.

Vivo di pane, I live on bread.

Che faceva delle forbici, what did he do with the scissors?

ADVERBS.

80. (1) Adverbs, unless they begin the clause, are generally placed immediately after the verb; *non*, however, always precedes the verb. When a compound tense is used, the adverb nearly always follows the past participle, but *già*, *mai*, *più*, and *sempre* usually precede it. See also

84. *Non* precedes a conjunctive and follows a disjunctive pronoun.

Ex.: *Non ci vado mai*, I never go there.

Ho parlato spesso, I have often spoken.

Non ha sempre parlato così, he hasn't always talked so.

Io non lo vedo, I don't see him.

(2) Adverbs are compared like adjectives (see **31**); but "better," "worse," "more," "less" are respectively *mégljo*, *péggio*, *più*, *méno*.

81. "Yes" is *sì* or *già*: *sì* when it expresses real affirmation, *già* when it denotes passive assent. "No" is *no*. "Not" is *non*, after which a word beginning with *s* impure generally prefixes *i*. "Or not" at the end of a clause is *o no*: as *sia véro o no*, "whether it be true or not."

Ex.: *Le piace?* — *Sì*. — "Do you like it?" "Yes."

Che tempaccio! — *Già*. — "What nasty weather!" "Yes."

Sta bene, he is well; *non istà bene*, he isn't well.

a. "What?" meaning "what do you say?" is *cóme?* *Che* and the interjection *o* are often used to introduce questions.

Ex.: *O perchè non rispondete? — Côme? — Che siete sordo, signóre?*
— "Why don't you answer?" "What?" "Are you deaf, sir?"

b. "Very" is *mólto* (see, however, **35**, a). Instead of using a word or suffix for "very," the Italians often repeat the emphasized adjective or adverb.

Ex.: *È mólto bello* or *è bellissimo*, it is very beautiful.

I suoi genitori erano pòveri pòveri, his parents were very poor.

82. "Only" may be translated by the adverb *sólo*, *sol-tánto*, or *solaménte*; or by the adjective *sólo*. When it modifies anything but a verb, it is often rendered by *non . . . che*, with the whole verb intervening, and with the word modified by "only" immediately after *che*.

Ex.: *Non ne ho compráto che due*, I have bought only two of them.

83. "Never" is *non . . . mái*, with the inflected part of the verb intervening. "Just," as an adverb of time, is *or óra*. "Early" is *présto*, *per tèmpo*, or *di buon' óra*. "This morning" is *stamáne*; "last night" is *stanòtte*. "The day after to-morrow" and "the day before yesterday" are respectively *domán l' áltro* and *ier l' áltro*. "A week, a fortnight from to-day" are *óggi a ótto*, *a quíndici*. "Ago" is translated by *fa*, which follows the substantive of time; if this substantive is plural, "ago" may be rendered also by *sóno* (*èrano* or *saránno* if the date from which time is counted be past or future).

Ex.: *Non ti ha mái vedúto*, he has never seen thee.

Son arriváti or óra, they have just arrived.

Tre ánni fa, three years ago; *quáttro giòrni sóno*, four days ago.

Ex. : *Lunedì erano due settimane*, two weeks ago Monday.
Domani saranno cinque mesi, five months ago to-morrow.

84. "Here" and "there" when they denote a place already mentioned, and no particular stress is laid upon them, are *ci* and *vi*, which are often used in Italian when they would be superfluous in English; "there is," "there are," etc., are *c'è* or *vi è*, *ci sono* or *vi sono*, etc. (sometimes *vi ha*). *Ci*, *vi*, and also *ne*, "thence," occupy the same positions with regard to the verb, and undergo the same changes, as the pronouns *ci*, *vi*, *ne* (**48**, **50**); they precede conjunctive pronouns beginning with *l* or *n*, and follow all others: *ce lo manda*, *ti ci mando*.

When emphasized, "here" is *qui* or *qua*, "there" indicating a place near the person addressed is *costì* or *costà*, and "there" denoting a point remote from both speaker and hearer is *lì* or *là*.

Ex. : *Carlo vi è tornato*, Charles has gone back there.
Alla scuola non ci vado, I don't go to school.
Voi rimarrête costà, egli resterà laggiù, ed io non partirò di qui, you will remain where you are, he will stay down there, and I shall not move from here.

a. "Here I am," "here it is," etc., are *èccomi*, *èccolo*, etc.

85. Most adverbs of manner are formed by adding *-mente* to the feminine singular of the corresponding adjective. Adjectives in *-le* and *-re* drop their final *e* in forming the adverb. See **35**, a.

Ex. : *Francò*, frank; *francamente*, frankly.
Felice, happy; *felicemente*, happily.
Piacevole, pleasant; *piacevolmente*, pleasantly.

a. "So" meaning "it" is translated *lo*: as *lo faccio*, "I do so"; *lo crede*, "he thinks so"; *lo dicono*, "they say so."

EXERCISE 19.

Agostino è un goloso di prima riga. Côme¹ vedeva dei confetti, una chicca, delle frutta, subito se le pigliava e mangiava senza permesso, anche se non erano sue. Infino i suoi compagni di scuola lo rimproveravano di questo viziaccio. La maestra pensò di punire Agostino. Un giorno, quando fu l'ora della ricreazione, tirò fuori dalla sua cassetta de' confetti, e mettendoli nel panierino d' Agostino, gli disse²: — Questi li porterai a casa alla tua sorellina. — Agostino a veder que' confetti fece⁶ certi occhiوني grossi come quelli d' un bœve. Non istava più in sè³ dalla voglia di mangiare que' confetti. Era tanto goloso, che se aveva qualcosa di suo non dava nulla a nessuno; era tanto goloso, che aveva la sfacciataggine di mangiare le cose degli altri; o figuratevi dunque come si struggeva di⁴ mangiar que' confetti ch' erano nel suo panierino. Finita la refezione, i bambini vanno⁵ nel giardino. Appena Agostino vede che nella stanza dov' erano i panierini non c' era nessuno, sparisce dal giardino, e via a pigliare i confetti. Ma non ha finito di buttar giù il primo, che¹ sente un amaro, un sapore così cattivo da non poter reggere; sputa e risputa, ma l' amaro non se ne andava.⁵ Era curioso veder Agostino disperato per quel saporaccio. E i compagni chi da un uscio, chi da un altro, e chi dalla finestra che dava sul giardino, stavano a vederlo, e a ridere di questa cœlia che la maestra aveva fatto⁶ a quel goloso. Allora la maestra gli disse²: — Vedi, Agostino; ho fatto⁶ fare questi confetti pieni d' assenzio apposta per te; vedi a che cosa porta l' ingordigia! Un altro bambino non ci sarebbe rimasto a⁷ questa cœlia. — Agostino si accorse⁸ che la signora maestra gli aveva fatta⁶ questa cœlia per suo bene, e che se non si correggeva diventava lo zimbello di tutti.⁹

¹ When. ² *Dire*. ³ He was beside himself. ⁴ He was dying to. ⁵ *Andare, andarsene*. ⁶ *Fare*. ⁷ Wouldn't have been taken in by. ⁸ *Accorgersi*. ⁹ See footnote (§) on p. 69.

EXERCISE 20.

It is related that in by-gone¹ times a parrot escaped from a villa. This parrot had learned to say all-the-time²: "Who's-there³? who's-there³?" Having-fled⁴ into a wood, it was flying from one tree to another without knowing where to go. A peasant, who by chance was hunting⁵ in that place, eyed the parrot, and having never seen any¹⁸ birds before⁶ of this sort, he was⁷ amazed at-it,⁸ and took⁹ all-possible¹⁰ care to aim straight with his gun, so-as-to shoot-it¹¹ and carry it to show off as a rare thing. But while the peasant was aiming, the parrot, seeing⁴ him, repeated his usual question: "Who's-there³? who's-there³?" The-peasant's-blood-froze-in-his-veins¹² at those words; and lowering⁴ his gun, and taking-his-hat-from-his-head¹³ he hastened to reply to him, dreadfully¹⁴ mortified: "Excuse-me,¹⁵ for-mercy's-sake,¹⁶ I took¹⁷ you for a bird!"

- ¹ *Andàti.* ² Always. ³ *Chi c'è.* ⁴ Past participle. ⁵ *A caccia.* ⁶ *Per l'innanzi.* ⁷ *Rimase:* see 54, f. ⁸ *Ne.* ⁹ Gave himself. ¹⁰ *Ogni.*
¹¹ *Tirògli.* ¹² To the peasant not remained blood in-him (*addosso*).
¹³ *Levatosi di capo il cappello.* ¹⁴ *Tutto.* ¹⁵ *La scusi.* ¹⁶ For charity.
¹⁷ Had taken. ¹⁸ Omit.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

86. "One," "people," "we," "you," "they," used in an indefinite sense, are rendered in Italian by the reflexive construction with *si* (see 55).

Ex.: *Si canta bene in Italia,* they sing well in Italy.

Si fa così, you do this way; *se ne parla,* people speak of it.

Si fanno spesso queste cose, one often does these things.

87. “**All**” as a substantive is *tutto* (*tutti*, etc.): as *tacevano tutti*, “all were silent.” The adjective “all,” “the whole” is *tutto* followed by the definite article: as *tutta la terra*, “the whole earth”; *tutto il giorno*, “all day”; *tutte le române son belle*, “all Roman ladies are beautiful.”

88. “**Any**,” when it really adds nothing to the sense, is omitted: as *non ha libri*, “he hasn’t (any) books”; *voléte vino*, “do you want (any) wine?” When, however, this redundant “any” might be replaced by “any of the,” it is translated by the partitive genitive (see **12, a**): as *voléte del vino*, “do you want any (of the) wine?”

“Any” used substantively in the sense of “any of it,” “any of them” is *ne* (see **47, 3**): as *non ne ho*, “I haven’t any”; *non ne ha più*, “he hasn’t any more”; *ne avéte*, “have you any?”

“Any” used adjectively and meaning “any whatsoever” is *qualúnque*: as *lo fa mēgljo di qualúnque áltra persóna*, “he does it better than any other person.”

89. “**Some**,” when it adds nothing to the sense, is omitted or rendered by the partitive genitive: as *voléte búrro* or *voléte del búrro*, “will you have some butter?”

“Some” meaning “some of it,” “some of them” is *ne*: as *ne ha*, “he has some.”

Otherwise “some” is *alcúno* or *qualche*. *Qualche* is always singular (even when the meaning is plural), and is never used substantively. Ex.: *alcúne persóne* or *qualche persóna*, “some persons”; *alcúni lo dícono*, “some say so.”

90. “Some . . . others,” “the one . . . the other,” “one . . . another” are translated by *chi . . . chi*, *áltri . . . áltri*, *l’ úno . . . l’ áltro*, or *alcúni . . . alcúni*.

Alcuni used in this way is always plural. A verb whose subject is *chi* or *altri* (used in this sense) is always singular; *altri* is not used after prepositions. But *l' uno* and *l' altro* can be used in any case or number.

Ex.: *Tutti, chi più tosto, e chi meno, morivano*, all died, some sooner, some later.

Altri cade, altri fugge, some fall, others flee.

Gli uni son buoni, gli altri cattivi, some are good, others bad.

91. Following is a list of some other indefinite pronouns and adjectives:—

Anybody, <i>qualcuno, qualcheduno, chiunque</i> , pronouns.	Neither, <i>non . . . l' uno nè l' altro, nè l' uno nè l' altro</i> , pron. or adj.
Any more, <i>più, ne . . . più</i> , pron.	No, <i>non . . . nessuno, non . . . alcuno</i> , adj.
Anything, <i>qualchecosa</i> , pron.	Nobody, <i>non . . . nessuno</i> , pron.
Anything else, <i>altro</i> , pron.	No more, <i>non ne . . . più</i> , pron., <i>non . . . più</i> , adj.
Both, <i>tutti e due, l' uno e l' altro, ambedue</i> , pron. or adj.	None, <i>non ne . . .</i> , pron.
Certain, <i>certo</i> , adj.	Nothing, <i>non . . . niente, non . . . nulla</i> , pron.
Each, <i>ogni, ciascuno, ognuno</i> , adj.	Nothing else, <i>non . . . più niente, non . . . più nulla</i> , pron.
Either, <i>l' uno o l' altro</i> , pron. or adj.	Others, <i>altrui</i> (see 91, d), pron.
Every, <i>ogni, ciascuno, ognuno, ciascuna</i> , adj.	Several, <i>parecchi</i> (fem. <i>parecchie</i>), pron. or adj.
Everybody, <i>tutti</i> (pl.), <i>ciascheduno, ciascuno, ognuno</i> , pron.	Somebody, <i>qualcheduno, qualcuno</i> , pron.
Everything, <i>tutto</i> , pron.	Something, <i>qualchecosa</i> , pron.
Few, a few, <i>pochi</i> (pl.), pron. or adj.	Such, <i>talè</i> , adj.
However much, (or many), <i>per quanto (-ti)</i> , adj.	Such a, <i>un talè</i> , adj. (but also pron. in Ital., meaning "so-and-so").
Little, <i>poco</i> , pron. or adj.	Whatever, <i>qualunque</i> (invariable), adj.
Less, <i>meno</i> , pron. or adj.*	
Many, <i>molti</i> , pron. or adj.†	
More, <i>più</i> , pron. or adj.	
Much, <i>molto</i> , pron. or adj.	

* "Less" = "smaller" is *più piccolo*. † "A great many" is *moltissimi*.

a. The verb used with *nessúno*, *alcúno*, *niènte*, *núlla* (meaning "no," "nobody," "nothing") must be preceded by *non*, "not," unless this pronoun or adjective precedes the verb.

Ex.: *Non ho visto nessuno*, I have seen nobody.
Nessún pòpolo lo possiede, no people possesses it.

b. "Nothing" followed by an adjective is *niènte di*.

Ex.: *Non avete niente di buono*, you have nothing good.

c. *Ciascúno*, *ciaschedúno*, *ognúno*, *nessúno*, and *alcúno* when used adjectively are inflected like *úno* (see 14, 15).

d. *Altrúi*, "another," "others," "our neighbor," is invariable, and is not used as subject of a verb: as *con altrúi*, "with other people"; *chi ama altrúi ama sè stèssu*, "he who loves his neighbor loves himself." The prepositions *di* and *a* are sometimes omitted before it: as *la móstro altrúi*, "I point her out to others"; *la vòglia altrúi*, "the will of another."

EXERCISE 21.

Per mutàre¹! Riccárdo dice² mále di qualchedúno. Che brútto vízio è mái quéllo! A sentír Riccárdo, tútti son ásinì, tútti sóno cattívi; di buòni e di brávi non c'è che lúi. Ma ora-mái ognúno ha conosciúto di che pánni vèste,³ e nessúno gli créde piú. Se fósse brávo e buòno, si guarderèbbe dal dir mále di quèsto e di quéllo, ánche quándo ne avésse quálche ragióne. Figurátevi, dúnque, se può⁴ èssere buòno e brávo lúi che dice mále di tútti! Sòrte, ripèto, che nessúno gli créde piú, e quándo si sènte dir mále di qualchedúno, e si sa⁵ che c'è Riccárdo di mèzzo,⁶ ognúno si affrètta a rispòndere: Se l' ha détto² quel maldicènte di Riccárdo, non è véro núlla dicèrto.

¹ There he is at it again! ² *Dire*. ³ What sort of a fellow he is. ⁴ *Potére*. ⁵ *Sapère*. ⁶ At the bottom of it.

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

Arranged according to Conjugation.*

92. This list contains no compound verbs except those which differ in conjugation from their simple verbs and those for which no simple verb exists in Italian. With every verb its irregular forms are given: in the same line with the infinitive are the present participle (if it be needed to show the original form of the infinitive), the first person singular of the preterite indicative, the past participle, and the first person singular of the future indicative (if the future be contracted); immediately below are the present indicative, the imperative, and the present subjunctive, if these parts be peculiar. For *dàre* and *stàre* the whole preterite and the first person singular of the imperfect subjunctive are given also. *Èssere* is irregular throughout. *All tenses not mentioned are regular.* For peculiar *endings*, see **63, 68**. Note the following rules:—

a. If the *present participle* is given, the following forms, unless expressly mentioned, are to be constructed from its stem: all *preterite forms with accented endings*, and the whole *imperfect indicative* and *subjunctive*. E. g. *fàre*, pres. part. *facèndo*: hence pret. 2d sing. and 1st and 2d pl., *facèsti, facèmmo, facèste*; imp. ind., *facèva*, etc.; imp. subj., *facèssi*, etc.

If the present participle is not given, these forms, unless they be mentioned, are to be constructed from the stem of the infinitive. E. g. *venire*: pret. *venìsti, venìmmo, venìste*; imp. ind. *venìva*; imp. subj. *venìssi*.

b. Preterites in *-àì, -èì, -ìì*, and *-ètti* (except *dètti* and *stètti*) are

* Reference to these tables is facilitated by an Alphabetical List of Irregular and Defective Verbs (see page 101). Students are advised not to learn forms in parentheses nor any verbs or forms marked *rare* or *poetical*.

regular throughout. In all *other* preterites the third person singular can be formed from the first person by changing final *i* to *e*, and the third person plural by adding *-ro* to the third person singular. E. g. *fáre*, pret. *féci*: 3d sing. *féce*, 3d pl. *fécero*.

c. If the future is not given, it is to be constructed from the infinitive. The conditional always has the same stem as the future. See **65**, p. 60.

d. The imperative, when not given, is like the corresponding forms of the present indicative. See **66**, *b*, top of p. 62.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

1. Andáre, *go*, andái, andáto; andrò (anderò).

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Vádo <i>or</i> vô,	andiámo,	Va',	Váda,	andiámo,
vái,	andáte,	andiámo,	váda,	andiáte,
va,	vánno.	andáte.	váda,	vádano.

2. Fáre, *do*, facêndo, féci,* fáto; farò. *Fáre* (formerly also *fácere*) was originally a verb of the third conjugation: see **92**, *a*.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Fáccio <i>or</i> fô,	facciámo,	Fa',	Fáccia,	facciámo,
fái,†	fáte,	facciámo,	fáccia,	facciáte,
fa,†	fánno.	fáte.	fáccia,	fácciano.

3. Dáre, *give*, diêdi *or* dêtti, dáto; darò. *Imp. subj.* déssi.

PRES. IND.	PRET. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Dô,	Diêdi <i>or</i> dêtti,		Día,
dái,	désti,	Da',	día,
dà,	diêde <i>or</i> dêtte,‡		día,
diámo,	démmo,	diámo,	diámo,
dáte,	déste,	dáte.	diáte,
dánno.	diêdero <i>or</i> dêttero.‡		díano <i>or</i> díeno.

* In poetry we sometimes find a preterite *fêi*, *fêsti*, *fê* or *fêo*, *fêmmo*, *fêste*, *fêrono* or *fênno*; and an imp. ind. *fêa*, etc.

† Also *fáci*, *fáce*.

‡ Also *diè*, sing.; *diêr* or *diêro* or *diêrono*, pl.

4. Stáre (**67, a**), *stand*, stètti, státo; starò. *Imp. subj.* stéssi.

PRES. IND.	PRET. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Stò,	Stètti,		Stía,
stái,	stésti,	Sta',	stía,
sta,	stètte,		stía,
stíamo,	stémmo,	stíamo,	stíamo,
státe,	stéste,	státe.	stíate,
stánno.	stèttero.		stíano <i>or</i> stíeno.

SECOND CONJUGATION.5. Avére, *have*, èbbi, avúto; avrò. *See 53, b.**6. Sapére, *know*, sèppi, sapúto; saprò.

PRES. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Sò, sappiámo,	Sáppi,	Sáppia, sappiámo,
sái, sapéte,	sappiámo,	sáppia, sappiáte,
sa, sánno.	sappiáte.	sáppia, sappiano.

7. Cadére, *fall*, cáddi, cadúto; cadrò.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Cádo (cággio), cadiámo (caggiámo),	Cáda (cággia), cadiámo (caggiámo),
cádi, cadéte,	cáda (cággia), cadiáte (caggiáte),
cáde, cádono (cággiono).	cáda (cággia), cádano (cággiono).

8. Dovére, *owe*, dovéi (dovètti), dovúto; dovrò. *Imperative lacking.*

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Dèvo (dèbbo <i>or</i> dèggio),	Dèbba (dèva <i>or</i> dèggia),
dèvi (dèbbi),	dèbba (dèva <i>or</i> dèggia),
dève (dèbbe),	dèbba (dèva <i>or</i> dèggia),
dobbiámo (deggiámo),	dobbiámo,
dovéte,	dobbiáte,
dèvono (dèbbono <i>or</i> dèggiono).†	dèbbano (dèvano <i>or</i> dèggiano).

* In poetry we find: *aggio, dbbo*, or *dio* for *ho*; *dve* for *ha*; *aggia* or *dia* for *abbia*; *èi* for *èbbi*; a future *arò*, etc., or *averò*, etc., and similar forms in the conditional.

† Also *dèo, dèi, dèe, dovèmo, dovéte, dèono* or *dènno*.

9. Sedére, *sit*, sedéi *or* sedètti, sedúto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Siêdo <i>or</i> sêggo,	sedíamo (seggiámo),	Siêda <i>or</i> sêgga,	sedíamo (seggiámo),
siêdi,	sedéte,	siêda <i>or</i> sêgga,	sedíate,
siêde,	siêdono <i>or</i> sêggonno.	siêda <i>or</i> sêgga,	siêdano <i>or</i> sêggano.

10. Vedére, *see*, vídi, vedúto *or* vísto; vedrò. Provvedére *has a future* provvederò; prevedére *has* prevederò *or* prevedrò. *All other compounds are like* vedére.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Védo (véggo <i>or</i> véggio),		Véda (végga <i>or</i> véggia),	
védi,		véda (végga <i>or</i> véggia),	
véde,		véda (végga <i>or</i> véggia),	
vediámo (veggiámo),		vediámo (veggiámo),	
vedéte,		vediáte (veggiáte),	
védono (véggono <i>or</i> véggiono).		védano (véggano <i>or</i> véggiano).	

11. Giacére, *lie*, giácqui, giaciúto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Giácchio,	giacciámo,	Giácchia,	giacciámo,
giáci,	giacéte,	giácchia,	giacciáte,
giáce,	giacciono.	giácchia,	giacciano.

12. Piacére, *please*: *like* giacére (11).13. Tacére, *be silent*: *like* giacére (11).14. Solére, *be wont*, sôlito. *No pret., fut., cond., nor imperative.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Sôglio,	sogliámo,	Sôglia,	sogliámo,
suôli,	soléte,	sôglia,	sogliáte,
suôle,	sôgliono.	sôglia,	sôgliano.

15. Dolére, *grieve*, dôlsi, dolúto; dorrà.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Dôlgo (dôglio),	dogliámo,*	Dôlga (dôglia),	dogliámo,*
duôli,	doléte,	dôlga (dôglia),	dogliáte,
duôle,	dôlgono (dôgliono).	dôlga (dôglia),	dôlgano (dôgliano).

* Also *dolghiámo*: a popular form.

16. Rimanére, *remain*, rimási, rimásto *or* rimáso ; rimarrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Rimángo,	rimaniámo,*	Rimánga,	rimaniámo,*
rimáni,	rimanéte,	rimánga,	rimaniáte,
rimáne,	rimángono.	rimánga,	rimángano.

17. Tenére, *hold*, ténni, tenúto ; terrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Têngo,	teniámo,*	Tênga,	teniámo,*
tiêni,	tenéte,	tênga,	teniáte,
tiêne,	têngono.	tênga,	têngano.

18. Valére, *be worth*, válsi, valúto *or* válso ; varrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Válgo (váglio),	vagliámo,*	Válga (vágliá),	vagliámo,*
váli,	valéte,	válga (vágliá),	vagliáte,
vále,	válgono (vágliano).	válga (vágliá),	válgano (vágliano).

19. Volére, *wish*, vòlli, † volúto ; vorrò.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Vòglio,	vogliámo,	Vògli,	Vògliá,	vogliámo,
vuòli, †	voléte,	vogliámo,	vògliá,	vogliáte,
vuòle,	vògliono.	vogliáte.	vògliá,	vògliono.

20. Parére, *seem*, párvì, parúto *or* párso ; parrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Páio,	paiámo <i>or</i> pariámo,	Páia,	paiámo <i>or</i> pariámo,
pári,	paréte,	páia,	paiáte,
páre,	páiono.	páia,	páiono.

21. Potére, *be able*, potéi, potúto ; potrò. § *No imperative.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Pòsso,	possíamo,	Pòssa,	possíamo,
puòli,	potéte,	pòssa,	possíate,
può,	pòssono.	pòssa,	pòssano.

* Also *rimanghiámo* ; *tenghiámo* ; *valghíamo* : popular forms.† Also *vòlisi*.‡ Also *vuògli* *or* *vuòli*.§ In poetry we find a conditional *poria*.|| Also *puòte* ; *pònno*.

22. Persuadére, *persuade*, persuási, persuáso. *Pres.* persuádo, etc.
 23. Calére, *matter*, cálse, calúto. *Impersonal.* No fut., cond., nor imperative. *Not modern.*

PRES. IND.

Cále.

PRES. SUBJ.

Cágliá.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

e. All irregular verbs of the third conjugation are accented, in the singular and third person plural of the present indicative and subjunctive, on the same syllable as in the infinitive.

f. Verbs in *-cere* and *-gere* insert no *i* between the *c* or *g* and the *o* or *a* of the present indicative and subjunctive endings, except in the first person plural of both moods and the second person plural of the subjunctive. Cf. 60, last paragraph.

g. See chapter on Pronunciation, 4, S, d.

PRESENT REGULAR.

24. Accêndere, *light*, accési, accéso.
 25. Afflíggere, *afflict*, afflíssi, afflítto.
 26. Álgere, *be cold*, álsi. *Defective. Rare.*
 27. Allúdere, *allude*, allúsi (alludéi), allúso.
 28. Árdere, *burn*, ársi, árso.
 29. Arrôgere, *add*, arrôsi, arrôso or arrôto. *Defective. Rare.*
 30. Assídere, *besiege*, assísi, assíso. *Rare.*
 31. Assôlvère, *absolve*, assolvétti or assolvéi or assôlsi, assôlto or assóluto. *So risôlvère (determine); for sôlvère, dissôlvère, and risôlvère (dissolve), see 107.*
 32. Assôrbere, *absorb*, assôrsi (not in use), assôrto. *Rare.*
 33. Avèllere, *uproot*, avúlse, avúlso. *Defective. Rare.*
 34. Chiúdere, *shut*, chiúsi, chiúso. *So all verbs in -chiúdere or -clúdere. See, however, 4, S, d.*
 35. Còlere, *revere*, cólto or cúlto. *Defective. Rare.*
 36. Connéttere, *connect*, connéssi (connettéi), connéssso (connettúto). *Rare.*
 37. Conóscere, *know*, conóbbi, conosciúto.
 38. Conquídere, *conquer*, conquísi, conquíso. *Rare.*

39. Consumere, *consume*, consúnsi, consúnto. *Rare*. Presumere *has also* presuméi.
40. Contúndere, *bruise*, contúsi, contúso.
41. Córrire, *run*, córsi, córso.
42. Créscere, *grow*, crébbi, cresciúto.
43. Cuòcere, *cook*, cocêndo, còssi, còtto. *Pres. cuòcio or cuòco, etc.**
44. Decídere, *decide*, decisi, decíso.
45. Difêndere, *defend*, difési (difendéi), diféso.
46. Dirígere, *direct*, dirêssi, dirétto.
47. Discútere, *discuss*, discússi (discutéi), discúso.
48. Distínguere, *distinguish*, distínsi, distínto.
49. Divídere, *divide*, divisi, divíso.
50. Elídere, *elide*, elísi (elidéi), elíso.
51. Elúdere, *elude*, elúsi (eludéi or eludétti), elúso.
52. Êrgere, *erect*, êrsi, êrto. *Rare*.
53. Esígere, *exact*, esigéi (esigétti), esátto.
54. Esistere, *exist*, esistéi (esistétti), esistíto.
55. Espéllere, *expel*, espúlsi, espúlso. *Rare*.
56. Espládere, *explode*, esplòsi, esplòso.
57. Esprímere, *express*, esprêssi, esprêso. *So all other verbs in -prímere. Prémere and its compounds are regular.*
58. Fêndere, *split*, fendéi (fendétti or fêssi), fendúto or fêso.
59. Fíggere (figere), *fix*, fissi, fítto.
60. Fíngere, *feign*, fínsi, fínto.
61. Fóndere, *melt*, fúsi (fondéi), fúso (fondúto).
62. Frángere, *break*, fránsi, fránto.
63. Fríggere, *fry*, fríssi, frítto.
64. Genuflêttère, *kneel*, genuflêssi, genuflêso. *Rare*.
65. Intrídere, *dilute*, intrísi, intríso.
66. Intrúdere, *intrude*, intrúsi, intrúso.
67. Invádere, *invade*, invási, invásó.
68. Lêdere, *offend*, lêsi (*not in use*), lêso. *Rare*.
69. Lêggere, *read*, lêssi, létto.
70. Licere or lécere, *be lawful*, lécito or lítito. *Impersonal. Delective. Poetical.*
71. Lúdere, *play*, lúsi, lúso. *Rare*.
72. Mêrgere, *plunge*, mêrsi, mêrso. *Rare*.
73. Méttère, *put*, méssi or mísi, méssó.

* In the 1st and 2d persons plural of the pres. ind., subj., and imperative, *uo* is generally replaced by *o*: *cocidmo*, etc.

74. Mòlcere, *soothe*, múlse. *Defective. Rare.*
 75. Mòrdere, *bite*, môrsi, môrso.
 76. Muòvere, *move*, movêndo, môssi, môsso.
 77. Nâscere, *be born*, nâcqui, nâto.
 78. Nascóndere, *hide*, nascósi, nascósto.
 79. Neglîgere (*see 5, Gli*), *neglect*, neglêssi, neglêtto.
 80. Offêndere, *offend*, offêsi, offêso.
 81. Ostêndere, *show. Defective. Rare.*
 82. Percípere, *perceive*, percêtto. *Defective. Rare.*
 83. Pêrdere, *lose*, perdéi or perdêtti or pèrsi, perdúto or pèrso.
 84. Piòvere, *rain*, piòvve (piovè), piovúto. *Impersonal.*
 85. Pòrgere, *present*, pòrsi, pòrto.
 86. Predilîgere, *prefer*, predilêssi, predilêtto.
 87. Prêndere, *take*, prési, préso.
 88. Protêggere, *protect*, protêssi, protêtto.
 89. Râdere, *shave*, râsi (radéi), râso.
 90. Redîmere, *redeem*, redênsi (rediméi), redênto.
 91. Rêggere, *support*, rêssi, rêtto.
 92. Rêndere, *render*, rési (rendéi or rendêtti), réso (rendúto).
 93. Rîdere, *laugh*, rîsi, rîso.
 94. Riflêttere, *reflect*, riflêttéi or riflêssi, riflêttúto or riflêssso. Riflêtt-
 ere, "to reflect light," is generally irregular; riflêttere, "to
 meditate," is usually regular.
 95. Rifûlgere, *shine*, rifûlsi. *Past part. lacking. Poetical.*
 96. Rilúcere, *shine*, rilússi or rilucéi. *Past part. lacking.*
 97. Rispóndere, *answer*, rispósi, rispósto.
 98. Ródere, *gnaw*, rósi, róso.
 99. Rómpere, *break*, rúppi, rótto.
 100. Scéndere, *descend*, scési, scéso.
 101. Scîndere, *sever*, scîndéi or scîssi, scîsso.
 102. Sciòlvere, *breakfast*, sciòlsi or sciolvêtti, sciòlto. *Rare.*
 103. Scòrgere, *perceive*, scòrsi, scòrto.
 104. Scrîvere, *write*, scrîssi, scrîtto.
 105. Scuòtere, *shake*, scotêndo, scòssi, scòsso.*
 106. Soffòlcere, *support*, soffòlse, soffòlto. *Defective. Rare.*
 107. Sòlvere, *undo*, solvéi (solvêtti), solúto. *Poetical. So dissòl-
 vere; for assòlvere and risòlvere (determine), see 31.*
 108. Sòrgere, *rise*, sórsi, sórto.

* See page 94, footnote.

109. Sospêndere, *suspend*, sospési, sospéso. *So* appêndere, impên-
dere; pêndere *is reg.*, dipêndere *either reg. or irreg.*
110. Spândere, *spill*, spandéi or spandétti, spánto.
111. Spárgere, *scatter*, spársi, spárso or spárto.
112. Spêndere, *spend*, spési, spéso.
113. Spêrgere, *disperse*, spêrsi, spêrso. *Rare.*
114. Spôrgere, *project*, spôrsi, spôrto.
115. Strúggere, *melt*, strússi, strútto.
116. Succêdere, *happen*, succéssi or succedéi, succéssso or succedúto.
So concêdere, *which has also* concedétti; cêdere *and its other*
compounds are generally regular.
117. Súggere, *suck*, suggéi or sússi. *Past part. lacking. Rare.*
118. Têndere (*transitive*), *extend*, tési, téso. *The intrans. verb is*
reg., but has no past participle.
119. Têrgere, *wipe*, têrsi or tergéi, têrso. *Rare.*
120. Tôrcere, *twist*, tôrsi, tôrto.
121. Uccidere, *kill*, uccísi, uccíso.
122. Vîncere, *conquer*, vînsi, vînto.
123. Vîverere, *live*, vîssi, vîssúto or vivúto; viverò or vivrò.
124. Vôlgere, *turn*, vôlsi, vôlto.
125. Vôlvere, *turn*, vôlsi, vôlto. *Rare. Devolvere has a past part.*
devolúto.

PRESENT IRREGULAR.

126. Êssere, *be*, fúì, státo; sarò. *See 53, a.**
127. Bére or bévere, *drink*, bevêndo, bévvi (bevétti or bevéi), be-
vúto (beúto); berò or beverò.

PRES. IND.

Bévo or béo, beviámo or beiámo,
bévi or béi, bevéte or beéte,
béve or bée, bévono or béono.

PRES. SUBJ.

Béva or béa, beviámo or beiámo,
béva or béa, beviáte or beiáte,
béva or béa, bévano or béano.

* In the imperfect indicative *êramo* is often used for *eravámo*. We find in poetry: *sête* for *siête*; *ênno* or *en* for *sóno* (third plur.); *sie* for *sia*; *erámo*, *eráte* for *eravámo*, *eraváte*; *u* for *o* in the preterite and imperfect subjunctive; *fôro* for *fúrono*; *fía*, *fiano* or *fieno*, for *sarà*, *saránno*; *fôra*, *fôrano* for *saràrà*, *sarêbbe*, *sarêbbero*; *sêndo* for *essêndo*; *súto*, *essúto*, or *issúto* for *státo*.

128. Chiêdere, *ask*, chiêsi (chiési *or* chiedí), chiêsto.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Chiêdo (chiêggo),*	Chiêda (chiêgga),*
chiêdi,	chiêda (chiêgga),
chiêde,	chiêda (chiêgga),
chiediámo,	chiediámo,
chiedadé,	chiediáte,
chiêdono (chiêggonu).*	chiêdano (chiêgganu).*

129. Condúrre, *conduct*, conducêndo, condússi, condótto ; condurrò.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Condúco, conduciámo,	Condúca, conduciámo,
condúci, conducéte,	condúca, conduciáte,
condúce, condúcono.	condúca, condúcano.

130. Nuðcere, *harm*, nocêndo, nõcqui, nociúto.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Nuðco <i>or</i> nõccio, nociámo,	Nuðca <i>or</i> nõccia, nociámo,
nuðci, nocéte,	nuðca <i>or</i> nõccia, nociáte,
nuðce, nuðcono <i>or</i> nõcciono.	nuðca <i>or</i> nõccia, nuðcano <i>or</i> nõcciano.

131. Pórre, *put*, ponêndo, pósi, pósto ; porrò.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Póngo, poniámo (ponghiámo),	Pónga, poniámo (ponghiámo),
póni, ponéte,	pónga, poniáte,
póne, póngono.	pónga, póngano.

132. Trárre (tráere), *drag*, traêndo, trássi, trátto ; trarrò.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Trággo, traíamo <i>or</i> traggiámo,†	Trágga, traíamo <i>or</i> traggiámo,†
trái (trággi), traéte,	trágga, traiáte,
tráe (trágge), trággono.	trágga, trággano.

133. Vêllere (vêrre), *tear up*, vèlsi, vèlto ; vellerò (verrò *or* velgerò).
Vêllere, *which is rare, has not all the forms given here ; but its compound, svêllere, has them all.*

* Also *chiêggio, chiêggiono, chiêggia, chiêggiano.*

† Also *tragghiámo.*

PRES. IND.

Vèllo *or* vèlgo, velliámo (velgiámo),
 vèlli (vèlgi), velléte,
 vèlle (vèlge), vèllono *or* vèlgono.

PRES. SUBJ.

Vèlla *or* vèlga, velliámo (velgiámo),
 vèlla *or* vèlga, velliáte (velgiáte),
 vèlla *or* vèlga, vèllano *or* vèlghano.

134. Cògliere (còrre), *gather*, còlsi, còlto; coglierò *or* corrò.

PRES. IND.

Còlgo (cògljo), cogliámo (colghiámo),
 cògli, cogliéte,
 còglie, còlgonò (cògliono).

PRES. SUBJ.

Còlga (còglia), cogliámo (colghiámo),
 còlga (còglia), cogliáte,
 còlga (còglia), còlgano (cògliono).

135. Scégliere (scérre), *choose: like* cògliere (134).

136. Sciògliere (sciòrre), *untie: like* cògliere (134).

137. Tògliere (tòrre), *take: like* cògliere (134).

138. Giúngere (giúgnere), *to arrive*, giúnsi, giúnto; giungerò
 (giugnerò).

PRES. IND.

Giúngo (giúgno),
 giúngi (giúgni),
 giúnge (giúgne),
 giungiámo (giugniámo),
 giungéte (giugnéte),
 giúngono (giúgnono).

PRES. SUBJ.

Giúnga (giúgna),
 giúnga (giúgna),
 giúnga (giúgna),
 giungiámo (giugniámo),
 giungiáte (giugniáte),
 giúngano (giúgnano).

139. Cíngere (cìgnere), *gird: like* giúngere (138).

140. Múgnere (múgnere), *milk: like* giúngere (138).

141. Piángere (piágnere), *weep: like* giúngere (138).

142. Píngere (pígnere), *paint: like* giúngere (138).

143. Púngere (púgnere), *prick: like* giúngere (138).

144. Spégnere (spéngere), *extinguish: like* giúngere (138), *except that the forms with gn are as common as those with ng.*

145. Spíngere (spígnere), *push: like* giúngere (138).

146. Stríngere (strígnere), *bind: like* giúngere (138), *except that the p.p. is strétto or strínto. Costríngere has only costrétto.*

147. Tíngere (tígnere), *dye: like* giúngere (138).

148. Úngere (úgnere), *anoint: like* giúngere (138).

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

PRESENT REGULAR.

149. Apríre, *open*, apríi or apêrsi, apêrto. *Pres.* áprou, *etc.*
 150. Copríre (cuopríre), *cover*, copríi or copêrsi, copêrto. *Pres.* còpro (cuòpro), *etc.*
 151. Offríre (offerire), *offer*, offríi (offerii) or offêrsi, offêrto. *Pres.* òfro (offerisco), *etc.*
 152. Soffríre, *suffer*: like offríre (151).
 153. Convertíre, *convert*, convertíi or convêrsi, convertíto or convêrso. *Pres.* convêrto or convertisco, *etc.* *All other verbs in -vertíre are reg.*
 154. Costruíre (construíre), *construct*, co(n)strússi or co(n)struíi, co(n)struíto or co(n)strútto. *Pres.* co(n)struísko, *etc.*
 155. Digeríre, *digest*, digeríi, digerito (digêsto). *Pres.* digerísko, *etc.*
 156. Esauríre, *exhaust*, esauríi, esauríto or esáusto. *Pres.* esaurísko, *etc.*
 157. Seppellíre or sepellíre, *bury*, sep(p)ellíi, seppellíto or sepólto. *Pres.* sep(p)ellísko, *etc.*

PRESENT IRREGULAR.

158. Cucíre, *sew*, cucíi, cucíto. *Pres.* cúcio or cucísko. *This verb inserts i before o and a, but not before e and i.*
 159. Sdrucíre or sdruscíre, *rip*: like cucíre (158).
 160. Empíre or émpiere, *fill*, empiêndo, empií, empiíto. *All but the present from the stem of empiére. So compíre or cómpiere, which has also a past part. compíuto.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Émpio (empísko),	empiámo,	Émpia,	empiámo,
émpi (empísci),	empíte,	émpia,	empiáte,
émpie (empíscce),	émpiono (empísccono).	émpia,	émpiano.

161. Moríre, *die*, moríi, mórto; murrò or morirò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Muóio (muóro),	moriámo or muoiámo,	Muóia (muóra),	moriámo or muoiámo,
muóri or muóí,	moríte,	muóia (muóra),	muoiáte,
muóre,	muóiono (muórono).	muóia (muóra),	muóiano (muórano).*

* In all forms where *uo* occurs, it may be replaced by *o*.

162. Seguire, *follow*, seguìi, seguito. Pres. séguo, etc. The verb is generally regular; but the *é* may be changed to *iè* in all forms where it is accented. Proseguire has -séguo or -seguísco.
163. Sparire, *disappear*, sparìi or spàrvi, sparíto. Pres. (*regular*) sparísco, etc. Apparire has appàrvi or -si or -fi, apparíto or appàrso; comparire has compàrvi or -si or -fi, compàrso; otherwise they are like sparire, but they have in the present the additional forms: -páio, -pàre, -páiono; -páia, -páiano.
164. Díre, *say*, dicèndo, díssi, détto; dirò. Díre (*formerly* dícere) belongs really to the third conjugation: dicésti, -éva, -éssi.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Díco,	diciámo,	Dì,	Díca,	diciámo,
díci,	díte,	diciámo,	díca,	diciáte,
díce,	dícono.	díte.	díca,	dícano.

165. Salire, *ascend*, salìi or sàlsi, salíto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Sálgo (salísco),	saliámo or sagliámo,*	Sálga (salísca),	saliámo or sagliámo,*
sáli (salís-ci),	salíte,	sálga (salísca),	sagliáte,
sále (salísce),	sálgono (salíscono).	sálga (salísca),	sálgano (salíscono).

166. Venire, *come*, vénni, venúto; verrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Vêngo (vêgno),	veniámo,*	Vênga (vêgna),	veniámo,*
viêni,	veníte,	vênga (vêgna),	veniáte,
viêne,	vêngono (vêgnono).	vênga (vêgna),	vêngano (vêgnano).

167. Udire, *hear*, udíi, udíto; udirò (udrò).

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Ôdo,	udiámo,	Ôda,	udiámo,
ôdi,	udíte,	ôda,	udiáte,
ôde,	ôdono.	ôda,	ôdano.

168. Uscire (escire), *go out*, uscìi, uscíto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Êsco,	uscíamo,	Êsca,	uscíamo,
êsci,	uscíte,	êsca,	uscíte,
êsce,	êsciono.	êsca,	êscano.

169. Orire, *be born*, ôrto. *Defective. Rare.*

* Also *salghíamo*; *venghíamo* popular forms.

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

93. Every irregular verb in this list is followed by a number referring to the table of Irregular Verbs arranged according to Conjugation. Obsolete defective verbs that present no irregularity have not been mentioned.

a. Compound verbs have, in general, been excluded from this list, unless they differ in conjugation from the simple verbs from which they come (see **67**, *a*). The commonest prefixes are: *a-* (corresponding in meaning to the preposition *a*); *as-* (= Latin *abs-*); *co-*, *com-*, *con-*, *cor-* (= prep. *con*); *contra-* (= prep. *contra*); *de-*, *di-* (= Lat. *de-*); *dis-* (= Lat. *dis-*); *e-*, *es-* (= Lat. *ex*); *i-*, *im-*, *in-*, *ir-* (= prep. *in*); *o-* (= Lat. *ob*); *per-* (= prep. *per*); *pre-* (= Lat. *prae-*); *pro-* (= Lat. *pro-*); *r-*, *re-*, *ri-* (= Lat. *re-*); *s-* (= Lat. *ex-* or *dis-*); *so-*, *sos-*, *su-* (= Lat. *sub*); *sopra-*, *sopr-*, *sor-* (= prep. *sopra*); *sott-*, *sotto-* (= prep. *sotto*); *stra-* (= Lat. *extra*); *tra-* (= prep. *tra*). After several of these prefixes the initial consonant of the simple verb is generally found doubled: *a* + *cadere* = *accadere*. *S-* is sometimes combined with *con-*, *r-* with *a-* or *in-*: *scoscendere*, *raccogliere*, *rincorrere*.

Accadere, *see* cadere, 7.
 Accendere, 24.
 Accludere, *see* chiudere, 34.
 Accorgere, *see* scorgere, 103.
 Acquisire *has only* acquisito.
 Addurre, *see* condurre, 129.
 Affiggere, 25.
 Algere, 26.
 Alludere, 27.
 Accidere, *see* uccidere, 121.

Andare, 1.
 Annettere, *see* connettere, 36.
 Anteporre, *see* porre, 131.
 Antivedere, *p.p. only* antiveduto,
otherwise like vedere, 10.
 Apparire, *see* sparire, 163.
 Appartenere, *see* tenere, 17.
 Appendere, *see* sospendere, 109.
 Aprire, 149.
 Ardere, 28.

- Arrôgere, 29.
 Ascêdere, *see* scêdere, 100.
 Ascîôlvere, *see* sciôlvere, 102.
 Ascôndere, *see* nascôndere, 78.
 Aspêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.
 Assalîre, *see* salîre, 165.
 Assîdere, 30.
 Assîstere, *see* esîstere, 54.
 Assôlvere, 31.
 Assôrbere, 32.
 Assûmere, *see* consûmere, 39.
 Avêllere, 33.
 Avêre, 5.
 Bére, 127.
 Bévere, *see* hére, 127.
 Cadére, 7.
 Calére, 23.
 Cêdere, *generally reg., sometimes has*
pret. cêssi, p.p. cêssô.
 Chiêdere, 128.
 Chiûdere, 34.
 Cîgnere, *see* cîngere, 139.
 Cîngere, 139.
 Circoncîdere, *see* decîdere, 44.
 Côgliere, 134.
 Coincîdere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
 Côlere, 35.
 Collâdere, *see* lâdere, 71.
 Comparîre, *see* sparîre, 163.
 Compêtere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
 Cômpiere, *see* empîre, 160.
 Compîre, *see* empîre, 160.
 Comprîmere, *see* esprîmere, 57.
 Concêdere, *see* succêdere, 116.
 Conclûdere, *see* chiûdere, 34.
 Concûtere, *see* discûtere, 47.
 Condârre, 129.
 Connêttiere, 36.
 Conôscere, 37.
 Conquîdere, 38.
 Consîstere, *see* esîstere, 54.
 Constâre *is reg.*
 Constrûire, *see* costruîre, 154.
 Consûmere, 39.
 Contêndere, *see* têndere, 118.
 Contrastâre *is reg.*
 Controvêrtere, *see* Vêrtere.
 Contûndere, 40.
 Convêrgere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
 Convertîre, 153.
 Coprîre, 150.
 Côrre, *see* côgliere, 134.
 Córriere, 41.
 Corrispôndere, *see* rispôndere, 97
 Cospârgere, *see* spârgere, 111.
 Cospêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.
 Costrûire, 154.
 Crêscere, 42.
 Cucîre, 158.
 Cuôcere, 43.
 Cuoprîre, *see* coprîre, 150.
 Dâre, 3.
 Decîdere, 44.
 Dedârre, *see* condârre, 129.
 Delinquere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and*
its pret., delinquetti, is rare.
 Deprîmere, *see* esprîmere, 57.
 Desîstere, *see* esîstere, 54.
 Devôlvere, *see* vôlevere, 125.
 Difêndere, 45.
 Digerîre, 155.
 Dipêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.
 Dîre, 164.
 Dirîgere, 46.
 Dirîmere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
 Discêndere, *see* scêndere, 100.
 Discûtere, 47.
 Dispêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.
 Dissôlvere, *see* sôlevere, 107.
 Dissuadêre, *see* persuadêre, 22.

- Distáre, *reg. in pres. of all moods, no pres. p., otherwise like stáre, 4.*
 Distinguere, 48.
 Distrúggere, *see strúggere, 115.*
 Divedére, *has nothing but infin.*
 Divêrgere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
 Divídere, 49.
 Dolére, 15.
 Dovére, 8.
 Elêggere, *see lêggere, 69.*
 Elídere, 50.
 Elúdere, 51.
 Êmpiere, *see empíre, 160.*
 Empíre, 160.
 Êrgere, 52.
 Erígere, *see dirígere, 46.*
 Esauríre, 156.
 Escíre, *see uscíre, 168.*
 Esclúdere, *see chiúdere, 34.*
 Esígere, 53.
 Esímere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
 Esístere, 54.
 Espêllere, 55.
 Espládere, 56.
 Esprímere, 57.
 Êssere, 126.
 Estínguere, *see distínguere, 48.*
 Evádere, *see invádere, 67.*
 Fáre, 2.
 Fêndere, 58.
 Fêrvere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and is rare except in the third pers. of the pres. and imp. ind.*
 Fígere, *see fíggere, 59.*
 Fíggere, 59.
 Fíngere, 60.
 Fóndere, 61.
 Frángere, 62.
 Fríggere, 63.
 Genufíettere, 64.
 Giacére, 11.
 Gíre, *defect. : pres. giámo, gíte; imp. gíva or glá, etc.; imper. giámo, gíte; pres. subj. giámo, giáte; no pres. p.; rest reg.*
 Giúgnere, *see giúngere, 138.*
 Giúngere, 138.
 Illúdere, *see lúdere, 71.*
 Impêllere, *see espêllere, 55.*
 Impêndere, *see sospêndere, 109.*
 Imprímere, *see esprímere, 57.*
 Incídere, *see decidere, 44.*
 Inclúdere, *see chiúdere, 34.*
 Incútere, *see discútere, 47.*
 Indúrre, *see condúrre, 129.*
 Insístere, *see esístere, 54.*
 Instáre *is reg.*
 Instruíre, *see construíre, 154.*
 Intêndere, *see têndere, 118.*
 Intercêdere, *see succêdere, 116.*
 Intrídere, 65.
 Introdúrre, *see condúrre, 129.*
 Intrúdere, 66.
 Invádere, 67.
 Invalére, *p.p. only inválso, otherwise like valére, 18.*
 Íre, *defect. : pres. íte; imp. íva, etc.; pret. ísti, íste, íro; fut. írémo, íréte, íránno; imper. íte; imp. subj. ísse, íste, íssero; p.p. íto.*
 Istruíre, *see costruíre, 154.*
 Lécere, *see licere, 70.*
 Lêdere, 68.
 Lêggere, 69.
 Licere, 70.
 Lúcere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
 Lúdere, 71.
 Mantenére, *see tenére, 17.*
 Mêrgere, 72.
 Mêttere, 73.

- Mòlcere, 74.
 Mòrdere, 75.
 Moríre, 161.
 Múgnere, 140.
 Múgnere, *see* múgnere, 140.
 Muðvere, 76.
 Náscere, 77.
 Nascóndere, 78.
 Neglígere, 79.
 Nuócere, 130.
 Ofiëndere, 80.
 Offeríre, *see* offíre, 151.
 Offíre, 151.
 Opprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.
 Oríre, 169.
 Ostáre *is reg.*
 Ostëndere, 81.
 Parére, 20.
 Percípere, 82.
 Percuðtere, *see* scuðtere, 105.
 Pêrdere, 83.
 Permanére, *see* rimanére, 16.
 Persístere, *see* esístere, 54.
 Persuadére, 22.
 Piacére, 12.
 Piágnere, *see* piángere, 141.
 Piángere, 141.
 Pígnere, *see* píngere, 142.
 Píngere, 142.
 Piðvere, 84.
 Pôrgere, 85.
 Pórrer, 131.
 Pospórrer, *see* pórrer, 131.
 Possedére, *see* sedére, 9.
 Potére, 21.
 Precídere, *see* decídere, 44.
 Preclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.
 Predilígere, 86.
 Prémere *is reg.*
 Prêndere, 87.
 Prestáre *is reg.*
 Presúmere, *see* consúmere, 39.
 Prevedére, *see* vedére, 10.
 Prodúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
 Protêggere, 88.
 Provedére, *fut. ana cond. uncontracted, otherwise like* vedére, 10.
 Prúdere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and is used only in the third pers.*
 Púgnere, *see* púngere, 143.
 Púngere, 143.
 Raccógliere, *see* cògliere, 134.
 Rádere, 89.
 Raggiúngere, *see* giúngere, 138.
 Recídere, *see* decídere, 44.
 Redímere, 90.
 Rêggere, 91.
 Rêndere, 92.
 Repêllere, *see* espêllere, 55.
 Reprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.
 Resistere, *see* esístere, 54.
 Restáre *is reg.*
 Rídere, 93.
 Ridúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
 Riflêttere, 94.
 Rifúlgerer, 95.
 Rilúcere, 96.
 Rimanére, 16.
 Risólvere (*dissolve*), *see* sólvere, 107.
 Risólvere (*determine*), *see* assólvere, 31.
 Rispóndere, 97.
 Ristáre, *see* stáre, 4.
 Risímere, *see* consúmere, 39.
 Ródere, 98.
 Rómpere, 99.
 Salíre, 165.
 Sapére, 6.
 Scégliere, 135.
 Scéndere, 100.
 Scêrrer, *see* scégliere, 135.

- Scîndere, 101
 Sciôgliere, 136.
 Sciôlvere, 102.
 Sciôrre, *see* sciôgliere, 136.
 Scommètere, *see* mèttere, 73.
 Scoprire, *see* coprire, 150.
 Scôrgere, 103.
 Scrivere, 104.
 Scuôtere, 105.
 Sdrucire, 159.
 Sdruscire, *see* sdrucire, 159.
 Sedere, 9.
 Sedurre, *see* condurre, 129.
 Seguire, 162.
 Sepellire, *see* seppellire, 157.
 Seppellire, 157.
 Sofferire, *see* soffrire, 152.
 Soffôlcere, 106.
 Soffrire, 152.
 Solere, 14.
 Sôlvere, 107.
 Sopprimere, *see* esprimere, 57.
 Soprastare, *see* stare, 4.
 Sôrgere, 108.
 Sospêndere, 109.
 Sostare *is reg.*
 Sottostare, *see* stare, 4.
 Sovrastare, *see* stare, 4.
 Spândere, 110.
 Spârgere, 111.
 Sparire, 163.
 Spêgnere, 144.
 Spêndere, 112.
 Spêngere, *see* spêgnere, 144.
 Spêrgere, 113.
 Spîgnere, *see* spîngere, 145.
 Spîngere, 145.
 Spôrgere, 114.
 Stare, 4.
 Stridere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
 Strîgnere, *see* strîngere, 146.
 Strîngere, 146.
 Strâggere, 115.
 Subire *is reg.: pres. subisco.*
 Succêdere, 116.
 Sûggere, 117.
 Sussistere, *see* esistere, 54.
 Svèllere, *see* vèllere, 133.
 Tacere, 13.
 Têndere (*trans.*), 118. [*p.p.*
 Têndere (*intrans.*), *reg. verb, has no*
 Tenere, 17.
 Têrgere, 119.
 Tîgnere, *see* tingere, 147.
 Tîngere, 147.
 Tôgliere, 137.
 Tôrcere, 120.
 Tôrre, *see* tôgliere, 137.
 Tradurre, *see* condurre, 129.
 Tràere, *see* trarre, 132.
 Transîgere, *see* esîgere, 53.
 Trarre, 132.
 Uccidere, 121.
 Udire, 167.
 Úgnere, *see* úngere, 148.
 Úngere, 148.
 Uscire, 168.
 Valere, 18.
 Vedere, 10.
 Vèllere, 133.
 Venire, 166.
 Vêrre, *see* vèllere, 133.
 Vêrtere, *reg. verb, is used only in the*
pres. and imp.
 Vilipêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.
 Vincere, 122.
 Vivere, 123.
 Volere, 19.
 Vôlgere, 124.
 Vôlvere, 125.

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

- A**, to, at, in.
A', **ái**, **al**, *etc.* = **a** + *art.*
Abbellíto, beautified.
Accompagnáre, accompany.
Accôrgersi, perceive.
Ácqua, water.
Ad, *see A.*
Affacciársi, place one's self (*at a window*).
Affrettáre, hasten.
Agguantáre, seize.
Agostíno, Gus.
Álbero, tree.
Ále, wing.
Alétta, little wing.
Alettína, little wing.
Alfrédo, Alfred.
Allontanáre, send off.
Allóra, then.
Áltro, other.
Amáro, bitter.
Ánche, also, even.
Andár, *see Andáre.*
Andáre, go, to go, going.
Andársene, go away.
Andáto, gone.
Anêllo, ring.
Animále, animal.
Animalíno, little creature.
Antíco, old.
Ápe, bee.
Appéna, hardly.
- Appôsta**, on purpose.
Ária, air.
Arricchíto, enriched.
Arriváre, arrive.
Arriváto, having arrived.
Ásino, ass.
Assalíre, attack.
Assênzio, wormwood.
Assolúto, absolute.
Áttimo, flash.
Avánti a, in front of.
Avére, have.
Avvedérsi di, perceive.
Azionáccia, *from Azíone.*
Azíone, action.
Bábbo, father, papa.
Badáre, keep.
Bagnáre, bathe.
Bambíno, child.
Bárbaro, barbarian.
Barbóne, water-spaniel.
Baróne, baron.
Bastóne, stick.
Bel, *see Bêllo.*
Bellíssimo, very beautiful.
Bêllo, beautiful, fine, kind.
Ben, *see Bêne.*
Bêne, well, nicely, much.
Bêne, good (*noun*).
Bócca, mouth.
Bôve, ox.
Brávo, worthy.

- Brilláre**, shine.
Brútto, ugly.
Bucáto, pricked.
Bugía, lie.
Búio, dark.
Buôno, good.
Buttáre, throw. *Buttár giù* = swallow.
Cadére, fall.
Calzóni, trousers.
Can, see **Cáne**.
Cáne, dog,
Capáce, capable.
Cápo, head. *Da cápo, daccápo* = once more.
Cappêllo, hat.
Carlomagno, Charlemagne.
Cárne, flesh.
Cása, house, home.
Cascáre, fall.
Cassétta, drawer.
Cassettóne, bureau.
Castêllo, castle.
Cattívo, bad, naughty.
Cêlia, trick.
Cênto, a hundred.
Cercáre, search.
Cêrto, certain, some.
Cespúglio, bush.
Che, who, which, that.
Che, what. *Che còsa* = what.
Che, that.
Che, than.
Chi . . . chi, one . . . another.
Chiamáre, call.
Chícça, sweetmeat.
Ci, there.
Cínque, five.
- Città**, city.
Cittadíno, citizen.
Códa, tail.
Cógli, col, etc. = **con** + *art.*
Cògliere, catch, pick.
Còllo, neck.
Cóme, as, like, how, when.
Cominciáre, begin.
Comméttere, commit.
Compágno, companion.
Comúne, town. *Comúni* = commons.
Con, with.
Confètti, candy.
Conóscere, know, find out.
Cónte, count.
Continovaménte, continually.
Contínuo, continual.
Cónto, count.
Còrpo, body.
Corrèggersi, reform.
Còsa, thing. *Còsa pùbblica* = government.
Così, so, thus.
Creatúra, creature.
Crédere, believe.
Cúí, whom, whose.
Curiosità, curiosity.
Curioso, curious, funny.
Da, by, from, as to. *Dalle parti* = at the sides.
Daccápo, see **Cápo**.
Dái, dal, etc. = **da** + *art.*
Dáre, give, look.
De', dégli, déi, del, etc. = **di** + *art.*
Desidêrio, desire.
Détto, said, told.
Di, of, than, to, with.

- Dicêrto**, surely.
Di diêtro, from behind.
Diêci, ten.
Diêtro, behind, after. *Di diêtro* = from behind. *Diêtro a* = after.
Dintórni, neighborhood.
Dío, God.
Díre, say, speak.
Dirítto, right.
Discórso, talk.
Disobbediênte, disobedient.
Disperáto, desperate.
Distánza, distance.
Distrúggere, destroy.
Disubbiênte, disobedient.
Ditíno, from **Díto**.
Díto, finger. *Díto gróssso* = thumb.
Diventáre, become.
Dódicí, twelve.
Dolóre, pain.
Dópo, after.
Dóve, where.
Dovére, ought, must.
Dúe, two.
Dúnque, therefore.
Duránte, during.
E, and.
Êcco, this is.
Ed, and.
Enríco, Henry.
Éssa, it.
Ésse, them.
Êssere, be. *Êssere per* = be about to.
Éssi, them.
Ésso, it.
Fálio, fault.
Fanciúilo, child.
Fáre, make, let.
Farfállá, butterfly.
Fasciáre, bandage.
Fêrro, iron.
Figliuôlo, child, son.
Figurársi, imagine.
Finchè non, until.
Finêstra, window.
Finíre, finish.
Fíno a, up to.
Fióre, flower.
Fioríto, flowery.
Firênze, Florence.
Firmaménto, firmament.
Fôglia, leaf.
Fónte, fountain.
Forestiêro, foreign.
Fra, between, in, to.
Fréddo, cold.
Frónte, forehead.
Frútto, fruit.
Fuggíre, flee.
Fuôri, out.
Fúria, haste.
Gámba, leg.
Gámbo, stem.
Gátto, cat.
Genitóri, parents.
Già, already.
Giardíno, garden.
Gíglío, lily.
Giorgétto, Georgie.
Giórno, day.
Girár, see **Giráre**.
Giráre, go around.
Giráto, gone around.
Gíro, turn, circuit.
Gíro gíro a, round and round.

- Giù**, down.
Giudizio, judgment, idea.
Gli, the.
Gli, it.
Gli, to him.
Glie, see **Gli**, **Le**.
Glôbo, globe.
Goloso, glutton, greedy.
Governáto, governed.
Gránde, big.
Grandíssimo, very big.
Grído, shout.
Grôssso, big.
Guardársi, refrain.
I, the.
Il, the.
Illumináto, illumined.
Il quále, who.
Imperatóre, emperor.
Impêro, empire.
In, in.
Infátti, in fact.
Infinitaménte, infinitely.
Infíno, even.
Infocáto, blazing.
Ingordígia, gluttony.
Insegnáre, teach.
Insêtto, insect.
Insiême, together.
Insómma, in short.
Intendiméto, intelligence.
Intórno, around (*adv.*).
Intórno a, around (*prep.*).
Invasíone, invasion.
Inspiráre, inspire.
L', see **La**, **Le**, **Lo**.
La, the.
La, it, her.
Là, there. *Di là* = there.
Laceráre, tear.
Ládra, thief.
Ládro, robber.
Lámpo, flash.
Lancétta, hand.
Lasciáre, leave, let, let go.
Lasciáto, let.
Lavoráre, work.
Le, the.
Le, to her, to it.
Le, them.
Leóne, lion.
Lêsto, quick.
Leváre, take away. *Levdrsi* (*with direct object*) = get rid of.
Leváto, up.
Li, them.
Li, there.
Líbero, free.
Lo, the.
Lo, him, it.
Longobárdo, Longobard.
Lontáno, distant.
Lóro, them, their.
Lúce, light.
Lucêrtola, lizard.
Lúí, him, he.
Lúme, light.
Luminóso, luminous.
Lúna, moon.
Ma, but.
Mádre, mother.
Maestóso, majestic.
Maêstra, school-mistress.
Maêstro, school-master.
Mággio, May.
Maggióre, larger.

- Mái**, ever. *Non mái* = never.
Malánno, harm. *Far malánni*
 = mischief-making.
Maláta, ill.
Maldicênte, gossip.
Mále, badly, ill.
Mále, wicked.
Mámma, mother, mamma.
Mandáre, send.
Mangiáre, eat.
Maniêra, manner.
Máno, hand.
Mattína, morning.
Méno, less.
Ménto, chin.
Méntre, while.
Meraviglióso, wonderful.
Metà, half.
Méttère, put. *Méttersi* = begin,
 put on.
Mézzo, half.
Mézzo, middle. *In mézzo a* = in
 the middle of.
Mício, puss, cat.
Milióne, million.
Minacciáre, threaten.
Minóre, smaller.
Minúto, minute.
Mío, my.
Módo, way.
Molestáre, annoy.
Mólti, many.
Mólto, much.
Môrdere, bite.
Mósca, fly.
Móstra, face.
Múro, wall.
Mutáre, change.
- Nascósto**, hidden.
Náso, nose.
Náto, born.
Ne, of it, for it.
Nè, nor.
Néi, nel, *etc.* = in + *art.*
Nemméno, even.
Nessúno, nobody.
Niccolíno, Nicholas, Nick.
Nído, nest.
No, no. *Di no* = no.
Nôbile, noble.
Nobiltà, nobility.
Nói, we, us.
Nôia, trouble.
Non, not. *Non . . . che* = only.
Nôstro, our.
Nôtte, night.
Nôve, nine.
Núlla, nothing.
Número, number.
O, or.
O, oh.
Ôcchio, eye.
Occhióne, *from Ôcchio*.
Odóre, odor.
Ógni, every.
Ognúno, everybody.
Óltre, beyond, over.
Óra, now.
Óra, hour.
Oramáí, at last.
Origine, origin.
Ôro, gold.
Orológio, watch.
Ôtto, eight.
Padroncínno, little master.
Palázso, palace.

- Panière**, basket.
Panierino, *from Panière*.
Páni, clothes.
Parécchio, some.
Parére, seem.
Párte, part, side. *Dalle párti* = at the sides. *A quésta párti* = to this time.
Participáre, participate.
Pázzo, step.
Pátto, condition. *A pátto che* = on condition that.
Pel = per il.
Pensáre, think.
Per, for, in order to, on account of, through, by.
Perchè, why, because.
Pêrdere, lose.
Perdonáre, pardon.
Permézzo, permission.
Però, therefore, however.
Pésce, fish.
Pêtto, chest.
Piánta, plant.
Picchiáre, strike.
Piccíno, tiny, small.
Píccolo, little, small.
Piêde, foot.
Piêno, full.
Pigliáre, take.
Pínna, fin.
Più, more, most.
Po', little.
Pô, then, too.
Portáre, take, bring.
Potére, can, be able.
Pôvero, poor.
Prêndere, take.
- Prêzzo**, near.
Prêsto, early.
Pretêndere, expect.
Prevalére, prevail.
Prímo, first.
Prónto, quick.
Público, public.
Puníre, punish.
Púnto, point.
Quadrúpede, quadruped.
Qualche, some.
Qualchedúno, somebody.
Qualcôsa, anything.
Qualcúno, somebody.
Quále, *see Il quale*.
Quándo, when.
Quánto, as much.
Quattórdici, fourteen.
Quáttro, four.
Que', *quéi*, *pl. of Quello*.
Quégli, *pl. of Quello*.
Quel, *see Quello*.
Quéllo, that, that one.
Quésto, this, this one.
Qui, here. *Di qui* = here.
Quíndi, therefore.
Raccontáre, relate.
Raggiúngere, overtake.
Ragióne, reason.
Rasênte, close.
Refezióne, lunch.
Rêggere, stand, endure.
Respiráre, breathe.
Rêttile, reptile.
Riccárdo, Richard.
Ricominciáre, begin again.
Ricordársi, remember.
Ricreazióne, recess.

- Rídere**, laugh.
Ríga, line. *Di prima ríga* = first-class.
Ríghettína, little mark.
Rimandáre, send back.
Rimanére, remain.
Rimediáre a, atone for.
Rimproveráre, reprove.
Ripêtere, repeat.
Ripôso, rest.
Rispóndere, reply.
Risputáre, spit again.
Rómpere, break.
Rôsa, rose.
Rotóndo, round.
Rubáre, steal.
Sanguínoso, bloody.
Sapére, know, hear.
Saporáccio, *from Sapóre*.
Sapóre, taste.
Sázzo, stone.
Scappáre, run away.
Scêna, scene.
Scénder, *see Scéndere*.
Scéndere, descend.
Scuôla, school.
Se, if, whether.
Se, *see Si*.
Sè, itself, himself, herself.
Secóndo che, according as.
Segnáto, marked.
Seguíre, turn out.
Sêi, six.
Sêmpre, always.
Senése, Sieneſe.
Sentíre, taste, hear.
Sénza, without.
Sêrpe, snake.
- Servitóre**, servant.
Sessánta, sixty.
Sêtte, seven.
Sfacciatággine, impudence.
Si, himself, herself, itself.
Si, yes, so.
Signóra, lady.
Signóre, gentleman.
Signoría, rule.
Símile, like.
Smisuráto, boundless.
Soáve, sweet.
Solaménte, only.
Sóle, sun.
Sollécito, early, brisk.
Sólo, alone.
Sommáto, added.
Sópra, on, above. *Di sópra* = up, above.
Sorélla, sister.
Sorellína, *from Sorélla*.
Sôrte, lucky.
Sospettáre, suspect.
Sospêtto, suspicion.
Sostégno, support.
Sótto, under. *Di sótto* = down, underneath.
Sparíre, disappear.
Spíochio, slice.
Spína, thorn.
Sputáre, spit.
Stánza, room.
Stáre, stay, stand.
Stélla, star.
Stéſso, himself.
Stéſso, same.
Stéſso, even.
Stracciáre, tear.

- Strétto**, close, tight.
Strilláre, scream.
Su, on, up.
Su', *sul*, *etc.* = *su* + *art.*
Súbito, at once.
Súo, its, his, her.
Tánto, so much, so, much.
Tánto . . . quánto, both . . . and.
Te, thee, you.
Têmpo, time.
Tenúto, held.
Têrra, earth, ground, land.
Território, territory.
Ti, thee, you.
Tiráre, throw, draw. *Tirár fuòri*,
take out.
Tócco, one o'clock.
Tornáre, return, returning.
Tórno tórno a, round and round.
Toscáno, Tuscan.
Tra, among, to.
Tranquillaménte, tranquilly.
Trátto: *a un trátto* = all at once.
Traversáre, cross.
Tre, three.
Trédici, thirteen.
Trónco, trunk.
Trováre, find.
Tu, thou, you.
Túo, thy, your.
Tútto, all. *Per tútto* = every-
where. *Tútti e díe* = both; *tútti*
e tre = all three; *etc.*
Uccellíno, *from Uccéllò*.
Uccéllò, bird.
Un, a, one.
- Úna**, a, one.
Úndici, eleven.
Úno, a, one.
Uôvo, egg.
Urláre, yell.
Úscio, door.
Vassoíno, tray.
Vedére, see.
Ventiquáttro, twenty-four.
Verità, truth.
Véro, true.
Véscovo, bishop.
Vêspa, wasp.
Vestíre, dress.
Vía, off, away, so forth. *Some-*
times used instead of a verb of
motion.
Viággio, way, journey.
Vicíno, near.
Viôla, violet.
Viôttola, path.
Víso, face.
Víspo, lively.
Viziáccio, *from Vízio*.
Vízio, vice.
Vóce, voice.
Vôglia, desire.
Volére, wish.
Volontariaménte, voluntarily.
Vôlta, time.
Voltár, *see Voltáre*.
Voltáre, turn.
Zámpa, paw, foot.
Zampína, little paw.
Zanzára, mosquito.
Zimbêllo, laughing-stock.

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY.

- A**, un, úno, úna.
Africa, Áffrica.
After, dópo.
Ago, fa.
Aim, miráre.
Air, ária.
All, tútto.
Alone, sólo.
Although, sebbêne.
Always, sêmpre.
Amaze, meravigliáre.
America, Amêrica.
An, *see* **A**.
Ancient, antíco.
And, e.
Another, un áltro.
April, apríle, *m*.
Around, intórno.
As, cóme.
As . . . as, quánto, tánto . . . cóme.
Asia, Ásia.
At, a.
Attach, attaccáre.
August, agósto.
Be, êssere, *irreg.* (**53**, *a*).
Beam, tráve, *f. or m*.
Beast, béstia.
Beautiful, béllo.
Because, perchê.
Begin, cominciáre.
Believe, crédere.
Big, grôssó.
Bird, uccéllo.
Black, néro.
Blood, sángue, *m*.
Boil, bollíre.
Born, náto. *Pl.*: náti, *m.*; náte, *f*.
Boy, ragázzo.
Branch, rámo.
Bread, páne, *m*.
Brother, fratéllo, *m*.
Bubble, vescichétta.
But, ma.
By, da. *By chance* = per cáso.
Call, chiamáre.
Capital, capitále, *f*.
Car, vagóne, *m*.
Care, cúra.
Carriage, carrôzza.
Carry, portáre.
Case, cáso.
Ceiling, pálco.
Chance, cáso. *By chance* = per cáso.
Charged, cárico.
Charity, carità, *f*.
Charles, Cárlo.
Choose, scégliere, *irreg.*
Christopher, Cristôforo.
Circle, tóndo.
City, città, *f*.
Cloud, núvola.
Club, bastóne, *m*.
Coat, ábito.

- Collect**, raccògliere, *irreg.*
Columbus, Colómbò.
Come back, tornáre.
Companion, compágno.
Confined, tenúto.
Construct, costruírre, *irreg.*
Continue, seguitáre.
Contrary, contráριο.
Cool, raffreddársi.
Corner, cánto.
Country, paése, *m.*
Cover, coprírre, *irreg.*
Creature, animále, *m.*
Crumb, bríciola.
Crush, schiacciáre.
Dark, búio.
Day, giòrno.
December, dicémbre, *m.*
Dense, dénso.
Department, dipartiménto.
Discover, scopírre, *irreg.*
Distance, distánza.
Divide, dividére, *irreg.*
Do, fáre, *irreg.*
Dominion, domínio.
Door, úscio.
Down, giù.
Dream, sognáre.
Drop, gócciola. *Drop by drop* =
a gócciola a gócciola.
Duke, dúca, *m.*
Dungeon, cárcere, *f.*
Dust, pólvère, *f.*
Earn, guadagnáre.
Earth, térra.
Eight hundred, ottocénto.
Eighty, ottánta.
Either . . . or, o . . . o.
- Emmanuel**, Emanuèle.
Emperor, imperatóre, *m.*
Empty, vuòto.
End, termináre.
Enemy, nemíco.
Escape, scappáre.
Europe, Euròpa.
Even, ánche.
Ever, mái.
Every, ógni.
Everything, tútto.
Everywhere, per tútto.
Eye, *noun*, òcchio.
Eye, *vb.*, occhiáre.
Fall, cadúta.
Family, famíglia, *f.*
Far, lontáno, *adv. and adj.*
Father, pádre, *m.*, bábbo.
February, febráio.
Fief, féudo.
Fifth, quínto.
Find, trováre.
Finger, díto. *Pl. díta, f.*
Fire, fuòco.
First, prímo. *Adv.*, *príma.*
Five, cínque.
Flat, piátto.
Flee, fuggíre.
Flower, fióre, *m.*
Fly, voláre.
Food, mangiáre, *m.*
For, per. *For yourself (conjunctive)* = vi, si.
Form, formáre.
Fort, fortézza.
Forth, fuòri.
Forty, quaránta.
Four, quáttro.

- Four hundred**, quattrocênto.
France, Frâncía, *f.*
Friday, venerdì, *m.*
Friend, amíco, *m.*, **23**, *c.*, (2).
From, da.
Fruit, frúttö.
Furniture, mobília.
Genoa, Gênova.
Give, dáre, *irreg.*
Go, andáre, *irreg.*
Good, buòno.
Grain, gráno.
Great, grânde.
Ground, târra.
Grove, boschéttö.
Grow up, venír su, *irreg.*
Gun, schiòppo, fucíle, *m.*
Hand, máno, *f.*
Happen, accadére, *irreg.*
Hardly, appéna.
Hasten, affrettársi.
Hate, odiáre.
Have, avére, *irreg.* (**53**, *b*).
He, égli, lúí.
Heat, cáldo.
Her, la, le, léi.
Herb, êrba.
Here, qua.
High, álto.
Him, lo, gli, lúí. *To him* = gli, a lúí.
Himself, si.
His, súo.
History, stòria.
Holiday, fêsta.
Honest, onêsto.
However, tuttavía.
Hunter, cacciatóre, *m.*
- I**, ío.
If, se.
Imagine, immagináre.
In, in.
Indeed, davvéro.
Inhabit, abitáre.
Inside, didêntro.
Instance, esêmpio.
Intense, vívo.
Intention, intenzióne, *f.*
Into, in.
It, lo, la, égli, gli.
Italian, italiáno.
Italy, Itália, *f.*
Its, súo, súa.
Itself, si.
Jailer, carceriêre, *m.*
January, gennáio.
July, lúglio.
June, giúugno.
King, re, *m.*
Know, sapére, *irreg.*, conóscere
 (= *be acquainted with*), *irreg.*
Land, paése, *m.*, târra.
Large, grânde.
Last, último (*precedes noun*).
Last year = l' áнно scórso.
Latter, quésto. *The latter* = quésti, *m. sing.*
Leaf, fòglia.
Leap-year, bisestíle, *m.*
Learn, imparáre.
Left, sinístra.
Lid, têsto.
Lift, solleváre.
Light, lúce, *f.*
Like, cóme.
Little (= *small*), píccolo, piccínno.

- Little** (= a small quantity), pôco.
Little by little = a pôco a pôco.
- Live**, vivere, *irreg.*
- Loaded**, cárico.
- Lorraine**: of *Lorraine* = lorenése.
- Loud**, fôrte.
- Low**, básso.
- Lower**, abbassáre.
- Man**, uômo, *pl.* uômini.
- Many**, mólti, *m.*, mólte, *f.*
- March**, márzo.
- Mask**, máschera.
- May**, mággio.
- Me**, mi, me.
- Melon**, cocómero.
- Merchant**, mercánte, *m.*
- Middle**, mèzzo.
- Mignonette**, amoríno.
- Mine**, mío.
- Moisture**, umidità, *f.*
- Monday**, lunedì, *m.*
- Month**, mése, *m.*
- Moon**, lúna.
- More**, piú.
- Mortify**, mortificáre.
- Most**, il piú.
- Mr.**, signór.
- My**, mío.
- Name**, nóme, *m.*
- Napoleon**, Napoleóne.
- Near**, vicíno a.
- Need**, bisógno.
- Never**, non . . . mái.
- Nice**, gentíle.
- Ninety**, novánta.
- No**, no.
- Nobody**, nessúno.
- Nor**, nè.
- Not**, non.
- November**, novèmbre.
- Now**, óra.
- Object**, oggètto.
- Observe**, osserváre.
- Oceanica**, Oceánia.
- October**, ottóbre.
- Of**, di. *Of them* = **ne**.
- On**, sópra, su (*before vow.*, sur).
- One**, úno.
- One's self**, si.
- Only**, sólo (*adj.*), non . . . che (*adv.*).
- Opposite**, oppósto.
- Or**, o.
- Other**, áltro.
- Ought**, dovére, *irreg.*
- Out**, fuôri.
- Outside**, difuôri, *m.*
- Over there**, laggiù.
- Pass**, pássio.
- Parents**, genitóri, *m. pl.*
- Paris**, Parígi.
- Parrot**, pappagállo.
- Part**, páрте, *f.*
- Peasant**, contadíno.
- Perfectly**, prôprio.
- Perhaps**, fórse.
- Persuade**, persuadére, *irreg.*
- Philip**, Filíppo.
- Place**, luôgo.
- Placed**, pósto.
- Plainly**, schiettaménte.
- Plant**, piánta.
- Point**, púnto.
- Poor**, pôvero.
- Pot**, péntola.
- Present**, presentáre.

- Prevent**, impedíre.
Principle, princípío.
Prison, prigióne, *f.*
Prisoner, prigioniero.
Profession, professione, *f.*
Purpose, úso.
Quantity, quantità, *f.*
Question, domanda.
Rain, pióggia.
Raise, leváre.
Rare, ráro.
Recognized, conosciuto.
Relate, raccontáre.
Remain, rimanére, *irreg.*, restáre.
Repeat, ripêtere.
Reply, rispóndere, *irreg.*
Resolve, risciógliere, *irreg.*
Rest, posáre.
Right, destra.
Rise, salíre, *irreg.*
Room, stánza.
Root, radíce, *f.*
Round, rotóndo.
Rule, signoría.
Sacrifice, sacrificio.
Sail, navigáre.
Sailor, marináro.
Same, stésso (*precedes noun*).
Satisfy, contentáre.
Saturday, sábato.
Say, díre, *irreg.*
Sea, máre, *m.*
Second, secóndo.
See, vedére, *irreg.*
Seed, séme, *m.*
Sent, mandáto.
September, settêmbre, *m.*
Service, servízio.
Seven, sêtte.
Shake, scuôttere, *irreg.*
Ship, náve, *f.*
Shoot, báriba.
Short, córto.
Show off, far vedére, *irreg.*
Side, párte, *f.*
Silence, silênzio.
Sinister, sinistro.
Sir, signóre, *m.*
Sixty, sessánta.
Sky, ciêlo.
Small, píccolo, píccíno.
Smoke, fúmo.
So, cosí.
So as to, per.
Some, quálche.
Somebody else, qualchedun' ál-
tro.
Sometimes, qualchevólta.
So much, tánto.
Son, fíglio.
Sort, sôrta.
Spaniard, spagnuôlo.
Speak, parláre.
Spider, rágno, rágnolo.
Sprouted, germogliáto.
Stalk, fústo.
Star, stélla.
Steam, vapóre, *m.*
Straight, dirítto.
Study, *noun*, stúdio.
Study, *vb.*, studiáre.
Sun, sóle, *m.*
Sunday, doménica.
Support, mantenére, *irreg.*
Surprised, sorpréso.
Surround, circondáre.

Table , távola.	Tuscan , toscáno.
Take , prèndere, <i>irreg.</i>	Twelve , dódici.
Tear , raschiáre.	Twenty-eight , ventôtto.
Than , che, di.	Twenty-nine , ventinóve.
Thanks , grázie, <i>f. pl.</i>	Twig , ramoscèllo.
That , <i>conj.</i> , che.	Two , dúe.
That , <i>rel. pron.</i> , che.	Under , sótto.
That , <i>demons. pron.</i> , quéllo.	Unfortunate , infelíce.
The , il, lo, la, i, gli, le.	Unhappy , sventuráto.
Them , li, le, lóro. <i>Of them</i> = ne.	Union , unióne, <i>f.</i>
Then , pòi.	Unite , raccógliere, <i>irreg.</i>
There , là, lì.	Until , <i>prep.</i> , fino a.
Therefore , però.	Until , <i>conj.</i> , finchè . . . non.
They , éssi, ésse, lóro.	Us , nói, ci (<i>conjunctive</i>).
Thick , gróssso.	Usual , usáto.
Thing , còsa.	Vapor , vapóre, <i>m.</i>
Think , pensáre.	Vegetable , vegetábile, <i>m.</i>
Third , tèrzo.	Very , mólto, tánto.
Thirtieth , trentésimo.	Victor , Vittório.
Thirty , trénta.	Villa , vília.
Thirty-first , trentésimo prímo.	Village , villággio.
Thirty-one , trentúno, trentún.	Water , ácqua.
This , quéstó.	Way (= <i>manner</i>), maniéra.
Thousand , mílle.	We , nói.
Three , tre.	Web , téla.
Three hundred , trecènto.	Wednesday , mercoledì, <i>m.</i>
Thursday , giovedì, <i>m.</i>	Week , settimána.
Thus , cosí.	What , <i>interrog. and exclam.</i>
Time , (<i>Ex. 2</i>) vólta; (<i>Ex. 18 and 20</i>) tèmpo.	che.
To , a. <i>To him</i> = gli.	What , <i>rel.</i> , quéllo che.
Together , insiême.	When , quándo.
Too (= <i>also</i>), ánche.	Where , dóve.
Too (= <i>excessively</i>), tróppo.	Which , che.
Tree , álbero.	While , méntre.
Trunk , tróncó.	Who , <i>rel.</i> , che.
Tuesday , martedì, <i>m.</i>	Whom , <i>rel.</i> , cúí.
Furn , giráre.	Willingly , volentiéri.
	Wind , vènto.

Window, finêstra.

With, con.

Without, sênza.

Wood, bôscò.

Word, paròla.

Working-day, giòrno di lavóro.

World, móndo.

Year, áнно.

Yes, già.

You, vói, vi, Lêi, la, le. *To you*
= vi, le.

Your, vóstro, Súo.

Yourself, vi, si. *For yourself* =
vi, si.

APPENDIX.

ADDITIONAL NOTES ON PRONUNCIATION.

[The numbers prefixed to the following notes refer to the paragraphs of the first chapter in this book.]

1. The Tuscan names of the letters are : *a*, *bi*, *ci*, *di*, *é*, *éffe*, *gi*, *acca*, *i*, *jé* or *i lúngo*, *éлле*, *émme*, *énne*, *ó*, *pi*, *cu*, *érre*, *ésse*, *ti*, *u*, *vu* or *vi*, *zêta* (with *z* pronounced *dz*). They do not change in the plural. Their gender is not fixed ; in general those ending in *a* or *e* are considered as feminine, the others as masculine. *K*, *x*, *y* are *cáppa*, *iccase*, *ípsilon*, all masculine.

2. *a*. The sounds *á*, *é*, *ó*, followed by a single consonant, are somewhat longer than the other vowels : for instance, in *dáto*, *fèro*, *óvo* the accented *a*, *e*, *o* are longer than in *dáttero*, *véro*, *óve*. Final accented vowels sound particularly short : as in *amò*, *beltà*, *caffè*.

β. In forming *i* the mouth should be made as broad as possible from side to side. For *u* and *ó* the lips should be puckered. For *a* and *é* the mouth should be opened very wide.

3. *a*. If an adverb in *-mènte* is formed from an adjective containing *é* or *ó*, this vowel has, in the adverb, a secondary accent, and retains its open sound : as (*brève*) *brèvemènte*, "briefly"; (*nobile*) *nòbilmènte*, "nobly." Furthermore, *é* and *ó* retain their quality in seeming compounds that consist, in reality, of two or more separate words : as *tostochè* = *tòstoché* = *tòsto che*, "as soon as."

β. Preterites and past participles in *-esi*, *-eso*, *-osi*, *-oso* have a close *e* or *o* ; except *chièsi* (also *chiési*), *esplòsi*, *esplòso*, *lèsi* (not used), *lèso*.

γ. In the suffixes *-eccio (-a)*, *-esco (-a)*, *-ese*, *-essa*, *-etto (-a)*, *-ezzo (-a)*, *-mente*, and *-mento* the *e* is always close ; while in the diminutive suffix *-ello (-a)*, and in the endings *-ente*, *-enza*, *-erio* (or *-ero*), and *-esimo (-a)* it is open : as *inglèse*, “English” ; *probabilmente*, “probably” ; *prudènte*, “prudent” ; *ventèsimo*, “twentieth.”

δ. In the endings *-oio*, *-one*, *-ore*, and in the suffix *-oso (-a)* the *o* is close ; while in the ending *-orio*, and in *-occio (-a)*, *-otto (-a)*, and *-ozzo (-a)*, used as suffixes to nouns or adjectives, it is open : as *vassòio*, “tray” ; *amòre*, “love” ; *romitòrio*, “hermitage” ; *casòtta*, “good-sized house.”

ε. In the following cases accented *e* or *o* may have either the close or the open sound : in *Giorgio*, *maestra*, *maestro*, *nego* (from *negàre*), *neve*, *organo*, *scendere*, *senza*, *siete* and *sono* (from *èssere*), *spegnere*, *Stefano*, *vendere* ; and in the conditional endings *-esti*, *-emmo*, *-este*. The present subjunctive forms *dieno*, *sieno*, *stieno* are pronounced also *dièno*, *sièno*, *stièno*.

ζ. In poetry we often find *ê* for *iê*, *ô* for *uô* : as *ven* = *viène*, “he comes” ; *cor* = *cuôre*, “heart.”

4. C. α. Between two vowels, of which the second is *e* or *i*, single *c* and single *g* are, in ordinary Tuscan speech, pronounced respectively like *sh* in “ship” and *si* in “vision” : as *páce*, “peace” ; *stagìone*, “season.”

β. Between two vowels, of which the second is *a*, *o*, or *u*, a single *c* is, in popular Tuscan speech, sounded nearly like English *h* : as *poco* (*pôho*), “little” ; *dì questa cosa* (*dì hwèsta hòsa*), “of this thing.” This pronunciation is regarded as vulgar.

J. Some writers use *j*, except after a consonant, for the *i* that is pronounced *y* : as *jeri* for *ièri*, “yesterday” ; *pajo* for *páio*, “pair.” It is sometimes used also for final *i* in the plural of words in unaccented *-io* : as *specchj* (also *specchì* and occasionally *specchiù*) for *spécchi*, “mirrors,” plural of *spécchio*.

Z. Aside from verbs in *-izzare*, *z* and *zz* have the value *dz* in the following words and their derivatives : —

arzólo	frizzo	magazzino	romanzo	zêlo
azzúrro	garzóno	mánzo	ronzio	zenít
barzellétta	gazzèlla	mêzzo	rózso	zêro
bizza	gazzétta	orizzónte	zaffiro	zêta
brézza	gónzo	ôrzo	zaffróne	zínco
brónzo	Lázzaro	pênzolo	zanzára	zodíaco
donzèlla	lizzerétto	pránzo	zêbra	zòlla
dozzína	lázso	ribrézzo	zêffiro	zóna

also in all derivatives of the Greek *zoos*, and in many uncommon words.

5. In pronouncing *gli* and *gn* the point of the tongue should remain behind the lower teeth : as *figlio*, "son" ; *ogni*, "every."

6. If one of the words mentioned below, or any oxytone ending in a vowel, is closely followed by a word beginning with a consonant, this consonant is, in Tuscany, generally pronounced double. The words are : * —

a	dì, <i>day</i>	giù	o §	sópra
che	dí', <i>say</i>	ha	più	sta †
chi	e	ho	qua	sto
ciò	è	ínfra	quálche	su
cóme	fa †	íntra	qui	te †
cóntra	fè, <i>faith</i>	là	re	tra
da	fe' = féce	lì	sa	tre
dà, <i>gives</i>	fo	ma	se, <i>if</i>	tu
da', <i>give</i>	fra	me †	sè	va †
do	fù	mo' = mòdo	si	vo = vado
dóve	già	nè	so	vo' = vòglio

Ex. : *verrà da me domani (verràddammèddomàni)*, "he will come to my house to-morrow." In such cases *c* is, of course, never pronounced like *h* (see 4, C, β).

* The materials for this list were taken from D' Ovidio's article in Gröber's *Grundriss der romanischen Philologie*, p. 496.

† Both the imperative sing. and the pres. ind. third sing.

‡ The disjunctive form.

§ Both the conjunction "or" and the interrogative particle.

INFLECTIONS OF THE VOICE.

1. Italian speech is at once smoother and less monotonous than American: it is less interrupted by breathings, and it has far greater variations of pitch. In order to speak or read Italian well, an American must learn to breathe in speaking as he does in singing; he must inhale deeply at the beginning of the clause, and not stop again until he reaches the end of it. The following directions may be of use; they are based on the Tuscan pronunciation, and particularly on that of Siena.

2. *a.* The simplest inflection in a declarative sentence is as follows: at the beginning the voice is pitched low; it rises in the middle (in earnest conversation often to a falsetto), and falls again at the end. The most emphatic word generally receives the highest tone; if there are no words after it to complete the cadence, the first words of the phrase are often repeated at the end: as *me lo dicono tutti me lo dicono* ("they all tell me so"), where the *u* of *tutti* is an octave higher than the beginning and the close of the sentence.

β. When there is a pause on some not particularly emphatic word before the main verb, that word has a slight circumflex accent, the voice rising about one semitone and falling about three: as *fuòri di città ^ c' è ùna bellissimo villa * ("outside the city there's a beautiful villa"), where *bellissima* has the high pitch, and the *a* of *città* has the circumflex. This accent is generally heard whenever modifying clauses or phrases precede the main clause.

γ. Almost all declarative sentences are made up chiefly of these two inflections, the long rise and fall and the short circumflex. Americans must avoid breaking up their sentences by meaningless falling tones. The fall occurs in Italian, as in English, on a very emphatic word, and at the end of a sentence. It is used, also, with a verb of saying or thinking, followed by a direct quotation;

and with any word or phrase used as a vocative, except in loud calling (see 4, β): as *allóra chiàma Alfrédo e gli dice* \ : *Bambino* \ , *dimmi la verità* \ (*Grammar*, Exercise 17), where the syllables *fre*, *bam*, and *dim* have the highest pitch.

3. α . Questions to which the answer may be "yes" or "no" have either one of two circumflex accents: in the first the voice rises about five semitones and falls one; in the second, which is sometimes used in reading and in polite phrases, the voice rises and falls about an octave. Ex.: *l' hái visto* ("have you seen him?"), where the pitches of *l' hái*, *vi*, and *sto* may be represented by the notes *do*, *fa*, *mi*; *ha bèn dormito* ("did you sleep well?"), where *mi* is an octave higher than *dor* and *to*. The former accent may be heard in the Irish pronunciation of English.

β . These inflections are nearly always confined to the last few syllables of the sentence. In some questions, however, they appear twice, generally occurring first on the verb; and occasionally the circumflex on the verb is the only one.

γ . Questions that cannot be answered by "yes" or "no" usually begin high, the pitch depending on the emphasis. The voice then falls, but generally rises again at the last syllable, going up about three semitones: as *o cóme* \ *hái fátto* / ("how did you do it?"). This accent is common among the Irish, and may be heard in England. The final rise is, however, often omitted, especially in very short sentences and in polite phrases: as *cóme sta* \ ("how do you do?").

4. α . Exclamations of surprise begin very high, and sink rapidly: as *sénti* \ ("no!"*); *un affàr di niènte* \ ("you don't say so!"*), where *un* has the main stress; *per mio bácco* ("I want to know!"*), with the accent on *per*.

β . In calling to persons at a distance, the Tuscans sing rather than speak; the usual tune is *do*, *la*, *sol*, the accented syllable being highest: as *Agostína* ("Augustine!"); *partènza* ("all aboard!").

* Popular New England equivalents.

INDEX.

[The numbers refer to paragraphs. *Ap. N.* means "Appendix, Additional Notes on Pronunciation"; *Ap. V.* stands for "Appendix, Inflections of the Voice."]

A (letter): 2; *Ap. N.*, 2.

A (preposition): 79; 79, *b, h.*

Accent: 7; 47; 48; 84; 92, *e*;
Ap. V.

Accents: 3; 7.

Address (Forms of): 52.

Adjectives: 26-34.

Comparison: 31-34.

Gender: 26; 28.

Number: 26; 29.

Position: 27.

Used as nouns: 20; 30.

Adverbs: 80-85.

Ci, vi: 47, *a*; 84.

Comparison: 80, 2.

Manner: 85.

Ne: 47, *a*; 56, *b.*

Newer: 83.

Not, non: 80, 1; 81; 91, *a.*

Only: 82.

Position: 80, 1.

So: 85, *a.*

All: 87.

Alphabet: 1; *Ap. N.*, 1.

Altrui: 91, *d.*

Any: 88.

Articles: 9-16.

Definite: see **Definite**.

Indefinite: see **Indefinite**.

Augmentatives: 35-37.

Auxiliary Verbs: 53-57.

Avere: 53, *b*; 54, 3.

Essere: 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3.

Compound tenses: 54; 56.

Modal auxiliaries: 57.

Avere: 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b*; 92, 5.

Be: 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3; 54, *a, c, d, f*;
92, 126.

Bello: 29, *c.*

Both: 38, 4; 91.

Buono: 29, *c.*

Can: see **Modal Auxiliaries**.

Ci (adv.): 47, *a*; 84.

Ci (pron.): 47-50.

Close Vowels: 3; *Ap. N.*, 3.

Comparison: 31-34; 80, 2.

Adjectives: 31-34.

Adverbs: 80, 2.

Irregular: 31, *a*; 80, 2.

Compound Tenses: 54; 56; 73;
75.

Conditional: 54, 2; 68, *b*; 76; 77;
92, *c.*

Contracted: 65; 66, 1; 92, *c.*

Conjugation: 53-68; 92.

First: 59.

Second: 60.

Third: 60.

- Fourth: 61.
 Variations: 63; 66, *a*; 68.
 Irregular verbs: 64-68; 92.
 Auxiliary verbs: 53-57.
 Compound tenses: 54; 56.
 Compound verbs: 67, *a*; 93, *a*.
Conjunctions: 78.
 With subjunctive: 77, *d*; 78, *a, b*.
Consonants: 4-6; Ap. N., 4-6.
Contraction: 12; 23 (†); 50 (*);
 63, *d*; 65; 66, *i*; 68, *a*.
- Da**: 79, *c, f, g*.
Dates: 38, *b*; 39, *b*.
Definite Article: 10-13.
 Form: 10-12.
 Use: 12, *a*; 13; 38, *b*; 39, *a*;
 45; 69; 70.
Di: 12; 17; 79, *b, 3, f, h, j*.
Diminutives: 35-37.
Do: 54, *g*.
Double Letters: 6.
Doubling: 48, *d*; 93, *a*; Ap. N., 6.
- E** (letter): 3; 68, *i, j*; Ap. N., 3.
E (conjunction): 78; 78, *c*.
Ecco: 48, *e*; 84, *a*.
Essere: 53, *a*; 54, *i, 3*; 54, *a, c, d*;
 92, 126.
Exclamations: 43, *b*; 79, *b*; Ap.
 V., 4.
For: 79, *e*.
Fractions: 39, *c*.
Future: 54, 2; 68, *c*; 74; 77.
 Contracted: 65; 66, *i*.
- Gender**: 9-11; 14-15; 18-21; 26;
 28.
Grande: 29, *c*.
- H**: 4; 22, *a*; 23, *a, c*; 59, *a*.
Have: 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b, h*; 57, *a*;
 92, 5.
Here: 84.
- I** (letter): 2; 22, *b*; 23, *b*; 59, *a*;
 60; 92, *f*; Ap. N., 2.
I (euphonic): 79; 81.
Imperative: 66, *b*; 72; 77, *a*.
Imperfect:
 Form: 63; 63, *c*; 65; 68, *a, h*.
 Use: 54, *d, e*; 73; 75. [77, *c*.
Impersonal Verbs: 51; 51, *h*;
Indefinite Article: 14-16.
 Form: 14-15.
 Use: 16; 38, *i*; 43, *b*.
Infinitive: 48, *b*; 58; 69-72.
 Contracted: 65.
Inflections of the voice: Ap. V.
Interrogation: see **Questions**.
Issimo (suffix): 35, *a*.
It: 47; 51; 51, *h*.
- Letters**: *i*; Ap. N., *i*.
- May**: see **Modal Auxiliaries**.
Modal Auxiliaries: 57.
Moods: 57; 69-77; 78, *a*.
 Conditional: 54, 2; 65; 66, *i*;
 68, *b*; 76; 77.
 Imperative: 66, *b*; 72; 77, *a*.
 Infinitive: 48, *b*; 58; 65; 69-72.
 Participle: 54, *a, b*; 62; 63, *d*;
 69-71.
 Subjunctive: 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.
Must: see **Modal Auxiliaries**.
Myself, *thysel*, etc.: 47, 2; 51, *e*.
- Ne** (adv.): 47, *a*; 56, *b*; 84.
Ne (pron.): 47, 3; 48; 49; 88; 89.

- Neuter Verbs:** 54, 3; 56, *a*.
-Never: 83.
-Non: 80, 1; 81; 91, *a*.
Not: 80, 1; 81.
Nouns: 17-25.
 Gender: 18-21.
 Number: 22-25.
Number: 9-11; 22-25; 29.
Numerals: 38-40.
 Cardinal: 38.
 Ordinal: 39.
- O** (letter): 3; 59, *b*; Ap. N., 3.
O (conjunction): 78; 78, *c*.
Old Forms: 19 (†); 23 (†); 47 (*);
 48, *d*; 50 (*); 63, *d*; 66, *a*;
 68; 92; Ap. N., 3, *ζ*.
One (indefinite): 55; 86.
Only: 82.
Open Vowels: 3; Ap. N., 3.
Ought: see **Modal Auxiliaries**.
- Participle:** 54, *a*, *b*; 62; 63, *d*;
 69-71.
 Past: 54, *a*, *b*; 63, *d*; 71, *c*.
 Present: 62; 69-71.
Partitive Genitive: 12, *a*; 88; 89.
Passive: 54, 1; 54, *f*; 55; 56, *c*.
Perfect Tenses: 54, 3; 56; 73;
 75.
Personal Pronouns: 46-52.
 Conjunctive: 47-50.
 Form: 47; 48, *c*, *d*; 50;
 52, 1.
 Position: 48; 49.
 Disjunctive: 51-52.
 Omission: 51, 2; 51, *h*.
 Use: 51; 51, 1; 51, *a*, *b*, *h*.
Pitch: Ap. V.
Plural: 22-25; 29.
 Irregular: 23, *d*; 25.
 Words in *-co* and *-go*: 23, *c*.
- Poetic Forms:** see **Old**.
Possessive: 17; 45; 52, 1.
Prefixes: 93, *a*.
Prepositions: 79.
 Da: 79, *c*, *f*, *g*.
 To: 79, *a*, *b*. [74
Present: 65; 66, 4; 68, *f*, *g*; 73;
Preterite: 60; 65; 66, 2, 3; 68,
 d, *e*; 75.
Preterite Perfect: 54, 3; 75.
Pronouns: 41-52; 86-91.
 Demonstrative: 42.
 Indefinite: 86-91.
 Interrogative, 43.
 Personal: see **Personal**.
 Possessive: see **Possessive**.
 Reciprocal: see **Reciprocal**.
 Reflexive: see **Reflexive**.
 Relative: 44.
Pronunciation: 1-8; Ap. N., 1-6;
 Ap. V.
- Quantity:** 2; Ap. N., 2.
Qualche: 29, *b*; 89.
Questions: 43; 51, 2; 77, *f*, *g*;
 79, *b*; 81, *a*; Ap. V., 3.
- Reciprocal** pronouns and verbs:
 47, 2; 48; 49; 50; 51, 3;
 51, *f*; 52, 1; 56, *b*.
Reflexive Pronouns: 47, 2; 48;
 49; 50; 51, 3; 52, 1; 55;
 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.
Reflexive Verbs: 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*;
 86.
Santo: 29, *c*.
Shall: 54, 2; 57.

Should: 54, 2; 57; 76; 77.

Si: 47-50; 52; 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*;
86.

So: 85, *a*.

Some: 89.

Spelling: 1-8.

Subjunctive: 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.

Suffixes: 35-37; 85; Ap. N., 3.

Syllables: 8.

Tenses:

Compound: 54; 56; 73;
75.

Future: see **Future**.

Imperfect: see **Imperfect**.

Present: see **Present**.

Preterite: see **Preterite**.

Than: 33.

There: 84.

Time of day: 38, *c*.

To: 79, *a*, *b*.

U (letter): 2; Ap. N., 2.

Verbs: 53-77; 92; 93.

Auxiliary verbs: see **Auxiliary**.

Conjugation: see **Conjugation**.

Lists of irregular verbs: 92; 93.

Alphabetical: 93.

By conjugations: 92.

Moods: see **Moods**.

Tenses: see **Tenses**.

Regular verbs: 55-56; 59-63.

Irregular verbs: 64-68; 92.

Regular parts: 66.

Compound verbs: 67, *a*;
93, *a*.

Old forms: 63, *d*; 68; 92.

Vi (adv.): 47, *a*; 84.

Vowels: 2-3; Ap. N., 2-3.

Whatever: 44, *c*.

Whoever: 44, *c*.

Will: 54, 2; 57.

Would: 54, 2; 54, *e*; 57; 76; 77.

You: 52; 86.

ADVERTISEMENTS

Beath's Modern Language Series.

ROMANCE PHILOLOGY.

- Introduction to Vulgar Latin (Grandgent). \$1.50.
Provençal Phonology and Morphology (Grandgent). \$1.50.

SPANISH.

- Bransby's Spanish Reader. 75 cts.
Hills and Ford's Spanish Grammar. \$1.25.
Edgren's Spanish Grammar. 80 cts.
Introducción á la lengua Castellana (Marion and des Garennes). 90 cts.
Ford's Exercises in Spanish Composition. 30 cts.
Ybarra's Practical Method in Spanish. Retail price, \$1.00.
Alarcon's El Capitán Veneno (Ford). 50 cts.
Alarcon's Novelas Cortas Escogidas (Remy). 50 cts.
Asensi's Victoria y otros cuentos (Ingraham). 50 cts.
Bardos Cubanos (Hills). 60 cts.
Cuentos Castellanos (Carter and Malloy). Vocabulary. 60 cts.
Cuentos Modernos (De Haan). Vocabulary. *In press.*
Echegaray's O Locura ó Santidad (Geddes and Josselyn). 40 cts.
First Spanish Readings (Matzke). Vocabulary. \$1.00.
Galdos's Marianela (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. 90 cts.
Nuñez de Arce's El Haz de Leña (Schwill). 65 cts.
Padre Isla's Lesage's Gil Blas (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. \$1.00.
Toboada's Cuentos Alegres (Potter). Vocabulary. 50 cts.
Valdés's José (Davidson). 80 cts.
Valdés's La Alegría del Capitán Ribot (Morrison and Churchman).
Notes and Vocabulary. 90 cts.

ITALIAN.

- Grandgent's Italian Grammar. 90 cts.
Grandgent's Italian Composition. 50 cts.
First Italian Readings (Bowen). Vocabulary. 90 cts.
Gheradi del Testa's L'oro e l'Orpello (Thurber). 25 cts.
Goldoni's Il vero Amico (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Goldoni's La Locandiera (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Goldoni's Un Curioso Accidente (Ford). 30 cts.

SCANDINAVIAN.

- Groth's Danish Grammar. \$1.00.

Heath's Modern Language Series.

FRENCH GRAMMARS AND READERS.

- Edgren's Compendious French Grammar. \$1.12.
Edgren's French Grammar, Part I. 35 cts.
Fraser and Squair's French Grammar. \$1.12.
Fraser and Squair's Abridged French Grammar. \$1.10.
Fraser and Squair's Elementary French Grammar. 90 cts.
Grandgent's Essentials of French Grammar. \$1.00.
Bruce's Grammaire Française. \$1.12.
Grandgent's Short French Grammar. Help in pronunciation. 75 cts.
Grandgent's French Lessons and Exercises. *First Year's Course for Grammar Schools.* 25 cts. *Second Year's Course.* 30 cts.
Grandgent's Materials for French Composition. Each, 12 cts.
Grandgent's French Composition. 50 cts.
Bouvet's Exercises in Syntax and Composition. 75 cts.
Clarke's Subjunctive Mood. An inductive treatise, with exercises. 50 cts.
Hennequin's French Modal Auxiliaries. With exercises. 50 cts.
Kimball's Materials for French Composition. Each, 12 cts.
Brigham's Exercises in French Composition. Based on *Sans Famille*. 12 cts.
Storr's Hints on French Syntax. With exercises. 30 cts.
Marcou's French Review Exercises. 25 cts.
Houghton's French by Reading. \$1.12.
Hotchkiss' Le Primer Livre de Français. Boards. 35 cts.
Fontaine's Livre de Lecture et de Conversation. 90 cts.
Fontaine's Lectures Courantes. Can follow the above. \$1.00.
Prisoners of the Temple (Guerber). For French Composition. 25 cts.
Bruce's Dictées Françaises. 30 cts.
Story of Cupid and Psyche (Guerber). For French Composition. 18 cts.
Lyon and Larpent's Primary French Translation Book. 60 cts.
Mansion's First Year French. For young beginners. 50 cts.
Méthode Hénin. 50 cts.
Snow and Lebon's Easy French. 60 cts.
Super's Preparatory French Reader. 70 cts.
Anecdotes Faciles (Super). For sight reading and conversation. 25 cts.
French Fairy Tales (Joynes). Vocabulary and exercises. 35 cts.
Bowen's First Scientific Reader. 90 cts.
Davies' Elementary Scientific French Reader. 40 cts.
Heath's French Dictionary. Retail price, \$1.50.

Death's Modern Language Series.

ELEMENTARY FRENCH TEXTS.

- Ségur's Les Malheurs de Sophie.** Two episodes. Notes, vocabulary and exercises by Elizabeth M. White, High School, Brooklyn, N.Y. 45 cts.
- Saintine's Picciola.** With notes and vocabulary by Prof. O.B. Super. 45 cts.
- Mairêt's La Tâche du Petit Pierre.** Notes, vocabulary and exercises by Professor Super, Dickinson College. 35 cts.
- Bruno's Tour de la France par deux Enfants.** Notes and vocabulary by C. Fontaine, High School, New York City. 45 cts.
- Verne's L'Expédition de la Jeune Hardie (Lyon).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Gervais Un Cas de Conscience (Horsley).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Génin's Le Petit Tailleur Bouton (Lyon).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Assollant's Aventure du Célèbre Pierrot (Pain).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Muller's Grandes Découvertes Modernes.** Photography and Telegraphy. With notes, vocabulary and appendixes. 25 cts.
- Récits de Guerre et de Révolution (Minssen).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Bruno's Les Enfants Patriotes (Lyon).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Bedollière's La Mère Michel et son Chat (Lyon).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Legouvé and Labiche's La Cigale chez les Fourmis.** A comedy in one act, with notes, by W. H. Witherby. 20 cts.
- Labiche's La Grammaire (Levi).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Labiche's Le Voyage de M. Perrichon (Wells).** Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Labiche's La Poudre aux Yeux (Wells).** Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Dumas's Duc de Beaufort (Kitchen).** Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Dumas's Monte-Cristo (Spiers).** Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Assollant's Récits de la Vieille France.** Notes by E. B. Wauton. 25 cts.
- Berthet's Le Pacte de Famine.** With notes by B. B. Dickinson. 25 cts.
- Erckmann-Chatrion's L'Histoire d'un Paysan (Lyon).** 25 cts.
- France's Abeille (Lebon).** 25 cts.
- Moinaux's Les deux Sourds (Spiers).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- La Main Malheureuse (Guerber).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Enault's Le Chien du Capitaine (Fontaine).** Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Trois Contes Choisis par Daudet (Sanderson).** *Le Siège de Berlin, La dernière Classe, La Mule du Pape.* Vocabulary. 20 cts.
- Erckmann-Chatrion's Le Conscrit de 1813.** Notes and vocabulary by Professor Super, Dickinson College. 45 cts.
- Selections for Sight Translation.** Fifty fifteen-line extracts compiled by Miss Bruce of the High School, Newton, Mass. 15 cts.
- Laboulaye's Contes Bleus.** With notes and vocabulary by C. Fontaine, Central High School, Washington, D.C. 35 cts.
- Malot's Sans Famille (Spiers).** Vocabulary. 40 cts.

Beath's Modern Language Series.

INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

- Dumas' La Tulipe Noire.** With notes by Professor C. Fontaine, Central High School, Washington, D.C. 40 cts. With vocabulary, 50 cts.
- Eckmann-Chatrian's Waterloo.** Abridged and annotated by Professor O. B. Super of Dickinson College. 35 cts.
- About's Le Roi des Montagnes (Logie).** 40 cts. Vocabulary, 50 cts.
- Paileron's Le Monde où l'on s'ennuie.** A comedy with notes by Professor Pendleton of Bethany College, W. Va. 30 cts.
- Souvestre's Le Mari de Mme de Solange.** With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. 20 cts.
- Historiettes Modernes, Vol. I.** Short modern stories, selected and edited, with notes, by C. Fontaine, Director of French in the High Schools of Washington, D.C. 60 cts.
- Historiettes Modernes, Vol. II.** Short stories as above. 60 cts.
- Fleurs de France.** A collection of short and choice French stories of recent date with notes by C. Fontaine, Washington, D.C. 35 cts.
- Sandeau's Mlle. de la Seiglière.** With introduction and notes by Professor Warren of Yale University. 30 cts.
- Souvestre's Un Philosophe sous les Toits.** With notes by Professor Fraser of the University of Toronto. 50 cts. With vocab. 55 cts.
- Souvestre's Les Confessions d'un Ouvrier.** With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. 30 cts.
- Augier's Le Gendre de M. Poirier.** One of the masterpieces of modern comedy. Edited by Professor B. W. Wells. 25 cts.
- Scribe's Bataille de Dames.** Edited by Professor B. W. Wells. 25 cts.
- Scribe's Le Verre d'eau.** Edited by Professor C. A. Eggert. 30 cts.
- Merimée's Colomba.** With notes by Professor J. A. Fontaine of Bryn Mawr College. 35 cts. With vocabulary, 45 cts.
- Mérimée's Chronique du Règne de Charles IX.** With notes by Professor P. Desages, Cheltenham College, England. 25 cts.
- Musset's Pierre et Camille.** Edited by Professor O. B. Super. 20 cts.
- Jules Verne's Tour du Monde en quatre vingts jours.** Notes by Professor Edgren, University of Nebraska. 35 cts.
- Jules Verne's Vingt mille lieues sous la mer.** Notes and vocabulary by C. Fontaine, High School, Washington, D.C. 45 cts.
- Sand's La Mare au Diable (Sumichrast).** Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Sand's La Petite Fadette (Super).** Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- De Vigny's Le Cachet Rouge.** With notes by Professor Fortier of Tulane University. 20 cts.
- De Vigny's Le Canne de Jonc.** Edited by Professor Spiers, with Introduction by Professor Cohn of Columbia University. 40 cts.
- Halévy's L'Abbé Constantin.** Edited with notes by Professor Thomas Logie. 30 cts. With vocabulary, 40 cts.
- Thier's Expédition de Bonaparte en Egypte.** With notes by Professor C. Fabregou, College of the City of New York. 25 cts.
- Gautier's Jettatura.** With introduction and notes by A. Schinz, Ph.D. of Bryn Mawr College. 30 cts.
- Guerber's Marie-Louise.** With notes. 25 cts.

Beath's Modern Language Series.

INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

- Lamartine's Scènes de la Révolution Française** (Super). With notes and vocabulary. 40 cents.
- Lamartine's Graziella** (Warren). 35 cts.
- Lamartine's Jeanne d'Arc** (Barrère). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Michelet: Extraits de l'histoire de France** (Wright). 30 cts.
- Hugo's La Chute**. From *Les Misérables* (Huss). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Hugo's Bug Jargal** (Boiëlle). 40 cts.
- Hugo's Quatre-vingt-treize** (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 50 cts.
- Champfleury's Le Violon de Faïence** (Bévenot). 25 cts.
- Gautier's Voyage en Espagne** (Steel). 25 cts.
- Balzac's Le Curé de Tours** (Carter). 25 cts.
- Balzac: Cinq Scènes de la Comédie Humaine** (Wells). 40 cts.
- Contes des Romanciers Naturalistes** (Dow and Skinner). With notes and vocabulary. 55 cts.
- Daudet's Le Petit Chose** (Super). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Daudet's La Belle-Nivernaise** (Boiëlle). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Theuriet's Bigarreau** (Fontaine). 25 cts.
- Musset: Trois Comédies** (McKenzie). 30 cts.
- Maupassant: Huit Contes Choisis** (White). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Taine's L'Ancien Régime** (Giese). Vocabulary. 65 cts.
- Advanced Selections for Sight Translation**. Extracts, twenty to fifty lines long, compiled by Mme. T. F. Colin, Wellesley College. 15 cts.
- Dumas' La Question d'Argent** (Henning). 30 cts.
- Lesage's Gil Blas** (Sanderson). 40 cts.
- Sarcey's Le Siège de Paris** (Spiers). Vocabulary, 45 cts.
- About's La Mère de la Marquise** (Brush). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Chateaubriand's Atala** (Kuhns). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Erckmann-Chatrian's Le Juif Polonais** (Manley). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Feuillet's Roman d'un jeune homme pauvre** (Bruner). Vocab. 55 cts.
- Labiche's La Cagnotte** (Farnsworth). 25 cts.
- La Brète's Mon Oncle et Mon Curé** (Colin). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
- Meilhac and Halévy's L'Été de la St.-Martin** (François). Vocab. 25 cts.
- Voltaire's Zadig** (Babbitt). Vocabulary. 45 cts.

Heath's Modern Language Series.

ADVANCED FRENCH TEXTS.

- Balzac's *Le Père Goriot* (Sanderson). 80 cts.
De Vigny's *Cinq Mars* (Sankey). Abridged. 70 cts.
Zola's *La Débâcle* (Wells). Abridged. 70 cts.
Sept Grands Auteurs du XIXe Siècle (Fortier). Lectures. 60 cts.
French Lyrics (Bowen). 60 cts.
Lamartine's *Méditations* (Curme). 75 cts.
Loti's *Pêcheur d'Islande* (Super). 30 cts.
Loti's *Ramuntcho* (Fontaine). 30 cts.
Renan's *Souvenirs d'Enfance et de Jeunesse* (Babbitt). 75 cts.
Beaumarchais's *Le Barbier de Seville* (Spiers). 25 cts.
Hugo's *Hernani* (Matzke). 60 cts.
Hugo's *Les Misérables* (Super). Abridged. 80 cts.
Hugo's *Ruy Blas* (Garner). 65 cts.
Racine's *Andromaque* (Wells). 30 cts.
Racine's *Athalie* (Eggert). 30 cts.
Racine's *Esther* (Spiers). 30 cts.
Racine's *Les Plaideurs* (Wright). 30 cts.
Corneille's *Le Cid* (Warren). 30 cts.
Corneille's *Cinna* (Matzke). 30 cts.
Corneille's *Horace* (Matzke). 30 cts.
Corneille's *Polyeucte* (Fortier). 30 cts.
Molière's *L'Avare* (Levi). 35 cts.
Molière's *Le Bourgeois Gentilhomme* (Warren). 30 cts.
Molière's *Le Misanthrope* (Eggert). 30 cts.
Molière's *Les Femmes Savantes* (Fortier). 30 cts.
Molière's *Le Tartuffe* (Wright). 30 cts.
Molière's *Le Médecin Malgré Lui* (Gasc). 15 cts.
Molière's *Les Précieuses Ridicules* (Toy). 25 cts.
Piron's *La Métromanie* (Delbos). 40 cts.
Warren's *Primer of French Literature*. 75 cts.
La Bruyère: *Les Caractères* (Warren). 50 cts.
Pascal: *Selections* (Warren). 50 cts.
Lesage's *Turcaret* (Kerr). 30 cts.
Taine's *Introduction à l'Hist. de la Litt. Anglaise*. 20 cts.
Duval's *Histoire de la Littérature Française*. \$1.00.
Voltaire's *Prose* (Cohn and Woodward). \$1.00.
French *Prose of the XVIIth Century* (Warren). \$1.00.
La Triade Française. Poems of Lamartine Musset, and Hugo 75 cts.